

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1102 My Right Hand! 3 - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1102 My Right Hand!

3

Chapter 1102 My Right Hand! 3

The four figures were incredibly quick, and their power, which swirled around them, made it possible for the others to tell that two of them were in Mastery Realm and two in Fate Realm. One of them was even a cultivator who had mastered his own laws of fate.

No matter which True World they entered, such four people would be incredibly famous. When the four of them were together, their presence was like that of a tidal wave that was difficult for others to ignore.

However, the four of them had chosen to hide themselves. Even when the Abyss Dragon in Mastery Realm was killed and the one thousand Abyss Dragons died, even when the cultivators from the Emperor of Abyss' True World died with shrill screams under Flame Fiends' Progenitor's sea of fire, the four had remained composed and hid around the third prince, waiting for Su Ming's arrival. Only at the instant the screen of light appeared and Su Ming was bounced off that they launched a fatal attack.

Su Ming fell back. While his Qi and blood were still tumbling about, the long arcs had already closed in on him. The four aloof gazes and four great waves of killing intent of the four middle-aged men turned into four divine abilities filled with the Aura of Abyss that instantly rushed towards Su Ming.

He could not dodge. It was impossible even to consider. The laws in the area had changed. The area around felt as if it had been separated, isolated. All of Su Ming's retreat paths were sealed off, and since his Qi and blood were still tumbling about, he was in a death trap that would be fatal in most cases.

The third prince laughed madly while Yu Xuan bit down on her bottom lip. The firm look in her eyes seemed to have turned into words in her heart; she reminded herself continuously that the man before her eyes could bring forth a miracle.

Bang!

Su Ming trembled. Even his powerful physical body was injured gravely when the four people attacked together. When he coughed up blood, his body fell back, but as he did so, the four people smiled coldly and moved forward once more. They once again launched an attack together.

"Kill him, extract his soul! I want him to see how I will ravish this b*tch!" When he felt that he was no longer exposed to any danger and that victory was in his grasp, the third prince raised his right hand and slapped Yu Xuan fiercely behind the screen of light.

"B*tch, he's Su Ming, right?! He's that Su Ming you got to know in the land of Berserkers, right?! But so what if he appeared?! So what if he is incredibly powerful?!"

"You b*tch, that Su Ming you met in the land of Berserkers is a foolish lunatic! If he had stayed obediently in Morning Dao Sect with his name hidden, I might have never found him, but now?! So foolish!" The third prince laughed loudly.

The entire area had descended into a strange silence. Besides the battle in the sky, the image of the third prince from the Emperor of Abyss' True World from before and as of right then was in the eyes of all the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect. It manifested in the form of silence.

It was especially so for Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing, who had grim expressions which had never appeared on their faces before.

"Foolish, huh?" As Su Ming fell backwards, with his bloodshot eyes, he saw Yu Xuan cup her cheek. Blood trickled down the corner of her lips. His soul burned. Everything about him was boiling. As he mumbled, an extremely thick destructive power erupted furiously with a bang from his body.

At the instant the presence longing to destroy all lives in the universe erupted from him, on an altar formed by countless Runes which were fragmented continents incredibly far away but still in True Morning Dao World that was under the Immortals' Union's jurisdiction at the moment... was Su Ming's physical body. It was trembling furiously.

.....

What could be known as acting in a manner when one flung all caution to the wind?

What could be considered as not caring about any consequences?

There were times when madness could be used to describe it, but there was another word that was much stronger than that one and could be used to perfectly describe the source of a person not caring about all consequences.

And that was... care!

When care was shown to a certain thing or person, then due to their care for them, the person could overturn the universe, stopping at nothing!

For certain people, those things they cared about could not be touched under any circumstances!

"Foolish, huh? Perhaps... I am not an incredibly smart person. So what if I exposed myself? So what if I revealed everything?"

The red in Su Ming's eyes gradually disappeared. His crimson hair slowly turned normal. He regained his rationality, but in his heart, care that was several times greater than the madness he felt when his hair was crimson arose.

In all his life, there were only a few people that he cared about in his life. From the moment she kissed him all those years ago, Yu Xuan's image was etched deep in his heart, and she became one of the few people he cared about.

'She likes me... If I can't even protect her, then is there still any worth even if I come to Morning Dao Sect?

'There are few people in our lives who we need to treat like an obsessions and for whom we can give up on everything without any hesitation!

Steadfastness... Steadfastness... The red in Su Ming's eyes might have disappeared, but it was replaced by firm steadfastness. It filled Su Ming's heart, causing him to feel as if a barrier had been broken at that instant. As it shattered, the Three Mountains Illuminate the Moon appeared swiftly in the sky behind Su Ming, right before all of the cultivators' eyes. It happened without Su Ming intentionally summoning it.

The gigantic moon shone with a tri-colored light, causing all the cultivators in the area to suck in sharp breaths, especially the four people who closed in on Su Ming. Almost at the instant they executed their attack once more, an aura that erupted from Su Ming's body swept out in all directions. Once it crashed into the four, it forced them back continuously. Their expressions instantly changed drastically, and disbelief appeared on their faces!

"The power of manifesting Mastery Realm! This is the power of the world that every Almighty will stir up when their manifesting the power of Mastery Realm!"

"This person... the strength he showed previously had far surpassed those in Mastery Realm, so how is it possible that he's now manifesting the power of Mastery Realm?!"

"Lunar Kalpa Realm! He wasn't a cultivator in Mastery Realm! He was in Lunar Kalpa Realm! Such a huge moon... What cultivation method is he practicing?! How could he fight against the Almighties when he's just in Lunar Kalpa Realm?!"

The four people's breathing quickened. When they fell back, they could not hide the shock on their faces, because amid the disbelief in the depths of their hearts at that moment, an idea that brought fear had arisen.

'He could fight against Almighties when he was just in Lunar Kalpa Realm. If this person were to reach Mastery Realm... then how strong would he be?!"

During that moment, the four people weren't the only ones who reacted like that. Even the pupils of Old You and Ming—who were hesitant in their actions when they fought against Zhu You Cai—shrunk in surprise.

Reverend Zi Long from the Fourth True World stood up swiftly with disbelief on his face. His breathing quickened. Only at that moment did he realize swiftly that Su Ming... was just in Lunar Kalpa Realm! Su Ming had not hidden his level of cultivation and only showed the power belonging to those in Lunar Kalpa Realm, but was really just in Lunar Kalpa Realm!

A bright light flashed in the eyes of the old man in blue beside Reverend Zi Long. When he stared at Su Ming, strong praise and admiration were in his gaze.

There might be some people who had seen Su Ming's moon before in Morning Dao Sect, but at that moment, the aura spreading out from his body much increasing with an astonishing speed!

The three Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing cast each other glances, and each of them saw a look of interest in the others' eyes.

'In just Lunar Kalpa Realm, he could fight against the Almighty. If this person reaches Mastery Realm...' The three people's breathing quickened at the same time, and the light in their eyes immediately reached a dazzling degree.

"Dynast Dao Kong!"

The Morning Dao Sect disciples on the Azure Dragon's continent might have been a little uncertain due to the third prince's words previously, but at that moment, someone immediately began shouting with force and vigor.

Once the people heard his voice, all the cultivators on the Azure Dragon's continent and the nine million in the area beneath shouted one after another, and slowly, their voices fused together, turning into a wave of sound that surged to the skies and reverberated in the air.

"Dynast Dao Kong!!"

"Dynast Dao Kong!!!"

The voices continued echoing in the air. They formed an astonishing roar that shook the sky. The weather changed, and wind swept out in all directions. Su Ming threw his head back and let out a long howl like never before. It shocked all the cultivators in the area.

As he howled, the huge moon behind him crumbled with a bang. As it did so, its countless fragments gathered together once more. As they grouped, they formed... a gigantic, peerless sun that was unprecedented and would most likely never be seen

again by the people in the future. It was so huge that it far surpassed the sun possessed by all other cultivators in Solar Kalpa Realm!

It still shone with three colors. The crazed red, the sacred gold, and the chilling gray caused the sun to become the ultimate sight in the eyes of all the people in the area.

The Three Mountains Illuminating the Moon also turned into... the Three Mountains Shining on the Sun!

"Protect... care..."

Su Ming's figure was within the peerless sun. The strength of his erupted power shook the sky, and understanding appeared in his head.

He had been able to reach a breakthrough in his level of cultivation because the ability to care was a form of power. It would fuel his desire to protect and become a madness that could destroy everything.

This was a form of epiphany, a sediment that had laid in Su Ming's heart after all his changes of heart. It was... a form of power that allowed him to marginally understand Su Xuan Yi's form of protection at that moment.

'The source of power does not come from the universe or nothingness, neither does it come from the worlds outside... Borrowing the power from the things around us just leads to using external power in the end...

'True power comes from the heart and mind itself. It comes from the person.

'It's just like how we need our own will to not allow our power to spread outwards instead of using some from external sources. It's just like how we need our own bodies to form rebounds instead of using the power from external sources.

'True power, the true Great Dao... Perhaps the celestial origin from Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos is also like that, but no matter what it is, in the end, the path all of us take to obtain true power is of training our own minds and souls!'

Su Ming finally understood.

At the instant he came to an epiphany, an even more powerful wave of power erupted from his body with a bang. This eruption of his cultivation base caused the sun that had just been formed to instantly look as if it was about to melt. At the same time, the presence of those belonging to Mastery Realm radiated off him!

"Mastery Realm manifests a palm... because the palm symbolizes a full grasp of something, but the palm is also protection. To use the hand to protect... what is important is in the palm..." Su Ming mumbled.

As he did so, his real physical body lying on the altar surrounded by the fragmented continents in the territory of the Immortals' Union... furling his hand into a fist!

Chapter 1103 My Right Hand! 4

"The power to manifest Mastery Realm!"

An uproar immediately broke out in the area. All the cultivators who saw the scene were shocked, especially the disciples of Morning Dao Sect. Their spirits were lifted, and they continued shouting Dao Kong's name. Their voices traveled in all directions.

"All Almighties who step into Mastery Realm will have the power of manifesting Mastery Realm descend on them from the heavens. With this sort of power, even those in Death Realm will not be able to inflict even the slightest bit of damage to them.

"At this moment, all Almighties are protected!"

The Almighties who were retreating before Su Ming had shock hidden on their sullen faces. When they retreated, they immediately began communicating with each other with divine thoughts.

"Damn it, how could he suddenly reach a breakthrough and become an Almighty at this moment?! I thought he had long since become a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death based on his physical body and his combat abilities!"

"We can't fight against a person like this, but he can't walk away from the power of the world descending on him either. Only when he manifests the fingers and palm and completely enters Mastery Realm will he be able to move."

"Let's accumulate power. We will wait for him to come out, and at that moment, he will die!"

The four people gritted their teeth while staring at Su Ming. Killing intent was evident on their faces, and their auras continued growing in power. Even though they were wary of what Su Ming's power would become when he stepped into Mastery Realm, they were four people and old monsters who had been in Mastery Realm for years. They had a certain amount of confidence that they could be able to kill him.

After all, in their eyes, no matter how strong Su Ming became, he would have only just reached Mastery Realm. Killing him when his foundation was not strong enough was not impossible.

They were not the only ones who stopped fighting. Old You and Ming as well as Zhu You Cai parted and looked towards Su Ming who was enveloped in a gigantic vortex

with waves of strong, mighty pressure spreading out from him. He seemed to have fused with the universe.

Light flashed even in the eyes of Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing when all of them looked over simultaneously.

Yu Xuan stared at Su Ming with his head back and roaring from the vortex. There was a smile on her face, and a hint of pride within it. She was proud for Su Ming's achievements.

The third prince's expression was dark and gloomy. In his eyes was strong jealousy. He longed to move into the ranks of Almighties, so when he saw Su Ming entering Mastery Realm, a cold and sinister light danced in his eyes.

Under the gazes of all those around since even all that fighters had fallen into dead silence, Su Ming could feel his power increasing at an extremely terrifying pace.

The gigantic sun which had just been formed behind him swiftly melted as the cultivation base in him erupted. As it did so, it gradually shrank. From the distance, the sun looked as if it had turned into a huge fist.

At the same time, almost at the instant the fist-like sun stopped melting, Su Ming's continuously increasing power came to a swift halt. It looked as if it had crashed into an invisible wall.

At the instant Su Ming's whole body shuddered, the several people who were staring at Y Xuan immediately focused back on him.

"He's starting to manifest his fingers. Breaking through Solar Kalpa Realm and stepping into Mastery Realm requires a person to manifest the fingers of a hand. Based on the different levels of potential and the power accumulated, the fingers manifested end up different."

"That's right. The three of us only managed to manifest four and a half fingers in the past, and that was already an unprecedented matter in Morning Dao Sect. It's not as if there are no people who have managed to manifest all five fingers the moment they stepped into Mastery Realm, but their number is far too small. There are a handful of such people over the course of tens of thousands of years in a True World."

"I wonder how many fingers Dao Kong will manifest."

Morning Dao Sect's Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing cast each other glances as they communicated with divine thoughts.

Old You and Ming from True Sacred Yin World sneered. With their levels of cultivation, they were only slightly wary of Chang He. As for Su Ming, since they dared come, it

clearly meant that they were not worried about him. They naturally had methods to deal with the fifth kiln, which was why when they saw Su Ming manifesting his fingers, they could still smile coldly.

"This boy will only have three fingers. That will be his limit!"

When one of the two old men said that, a long string of laughter came from the Fourth True World. The voice of the old man in blue also reverberated in the air amid that laughter.

"Why don't we make a bet? I bet that this Dao Kong will manifest more than the three fingers you speak of. Do you dare make that bet?"

Old You and Ming turned around and looked towards the old man in blue from the Fourth True World. Their expressions were slightly dark, but there was wariness hidden behind it as well. They let out cold harrumphs.

At the instant all sorts of expressions appeared on the faces of the people, a shocking rumble came from Su Ming. His expression distorted. He felt as if there was a wall in his way, and if he did not break it, then it would be difficult for him to step into Mastery Realm. With a glint in his eyes, he had his cultivation base erupt and form an indescribable wave of impact that swept up all the power in his body and charged against the invisible wall.

Sound that shook the sky spread out in all directions. Under that wave of impact, Su Ming could clearly feel signs of the invisible wall cracking. After a moment, booming sounds surged into the air, and the wall shattered. At the instant it did so, Su Ming's cultivation base rose madly once more.

His long hair danced in the air, and a powerful light shone in his eyes. The area around him distorted. The vortex formed by the power of the universe descending in the area spread out. At the same time as Su Ming's cultivation base erupted from his body, the gigantic sun behind him extended a finger as if it was a fist!

The first finger appeared!

A power that was much stronger than before swept out from Su Ming's body. When it spread out, a deafening rumble shot into the air. Su Ming turned his head around and cast his gaze at the Vermilion Bird's continent beneath him, where the sullen third prince was enveloped by a screen of light.

A ruthless glare shone in Su Ming's eyes. He raised his right hand and pointed at the Vermilion Bird's continent.

Booming sounds surged into the sky, and Su Ming's vortex immediately roared. The shadow of a fingertip manifested within it before stretching into a huge finger. It was

several thousands of feet big, and at the instant it appeared, it gained complete, corporeal form. Not a hint of it being a mere illusion could be detected.

The huge finger was the first finger Su Ming had manifested among in Mastery Realm. He was not in a hurry to open all five fingers though and attacked.

As he pointed forward, the huge finger charged towards the Vermilion Bird's continent with a loud roar. It was so fast that an arc which seemed like it was formed when air had erupted appeared in front of the finger. That arc even showed signs of burning, as if there was a barrier, and the finger wanted to pierce through it.

In the face of the power from that one finger, a cold sneer appeared on the third prince's lips. It was full of derision. He naturally knew that when the power of the universe descended, no one could hurt Su Ming, but Su Ming could also not go through the power of the universe and attack others.

This was the rule, the law. It was something that no one could change.

Because of that, the act of sending the finger was incredibly ludicrous to him. However, the instant that mocking look appeared on his face, it was replaced by disbelief.

The expression of all the people in the area also changed, including those of Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing, Old You and Ming, Reverend Zi Long, and the old man in blue who had remained composed during the whole affair.

Everyone's pupils shrank at that instant.

Because... as that huge finger from Su Ming scrapped against the power of the universe, becoming slower as if unable to penetrate through the invisible power to bring forth the destruction it wanted, the slightly larger of the two Abyss Dragons let his eyes wander. All the people who fell into its line of vision felt as if the items in their storage bags had been seen through...

That Abyss Dragon let out a fake cough, cursed under its breath, lifted its claw, seized the air in front of it gently, and immediately, the power of the universe surrounding the large finger belonging to Su Ming and preventing it from moving forward... vanished.

At the instant it disappeared, the finger shot out with a bang, and with a speed even faster than before, it charged forward with a crazed desire to destroy the world—straight towards the third prince enveloped by the screen of light.

"This is impossible!"

Even with their level of cultivation and ability to compose themselves, Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing were stunned at that moment. There was no need to even talk about other people.

It was especially so for the four Almightyies who protected the third prince. The four of them had been gathering their strength when the sudden change in circumstances caused their expressions to change drastically. They were the third prince's guards, and they could not allow anyone to touch the third prince before them, or else it would show their incompetence and what would await them would be the punishment from the Emperor of Abyss' True World.

Without any hesitation, the four of them acted as one and turned into four long arcs which charged against Su Ming's huge finger rushing towards the third prince.

A loud bang shot up in the air, and it stirred up a powerful wave of impact from the spot where they came into contact with the finger. That wave of impact charged in all directions with loud, booming sounds. Ripples spread out, and a large number of cracks appeared in the air. As Su Ming's finger flashed a few times, it gradually disappeared from the people's sight.

However, the price for causing Su Ming's first finger to disappear was falling back of the four Almightyies. They coughed up blood continuously, and the Almighty in Mastery Realm who was the weakest among them was torn to shreds, his body and soul destroyed!

One dead, and three injured. This was the terrifying power Su Ming showed once he manifested his first finger in Mastery Realm.

"This is unfair!"

The remaining three people retreated swiftly. Their faces had went pale, and one of them let out an indignant roar. They could not hurt Su Ming because of the power of the universe... but Su Ming could disregard it and kill one of them as well as injure the rest with just one finger.

This... was indeed unfair, but their only answer came from the Abyss Dragon which was the bald crane. It shook its butt then turned back to wink at the person who had shouted before cursing under its breath.

"Darn it all..."

As it spoke, perhaps its movements when it shook its butt were a little too great, for it immediately turned around. A loud bang shot up...

Chapter 1104 My Right Hand! 5

When the one finger killed a person, it shocked all the people in the area, and a dead silence descended. Everyone's gazes were gathered on the Abyss Dragon which was

the bald crane. It was the first time it was the center of attention of so many people. A smug look appeared on its face, and it let out a few fake coughs, but just as it was about to say a few modest words...

Another loud roar came from the vortex, and the hearts of the people shuddered.

Su Ming felt his cultivation base continue rising. When it erupted, it crashed into the second invisible wall. This was his second obstacle, the gate leading to him manifesting his second finger in Mastery Realm!

If he broke that barrier, he could make the second finger appear on his sun. His cultivation base would increase once again at that moment. If he could not break it, then while he would still be in Mastery Realm, he would not be able to attain completion.

He might be much stronger than before... but he could still become much stronger!

"When I manifest my second finger, I will attack again, and I'd like to see... how many of you will be left," Su Ming said in a ghastly voice from the vortex. His cultivation base erupted and rammed against the invisible wall.

Twice, thrice. The booming sounds were even more intense than before. At the instant they shook the sky... the second finger appeared on the gigantic sun behind Su Ming!

There were two fingers on the sun which seemed to have turned into a fist, and Su Ming's power rose once more. A terrifying presence spread out from his body. There were just two fingers, but the presence spreading out from him was already equivalent to that of normal Almighties who had attained great completion in Mastery Realm.

After all, this was the presence of Su Ming's cultivation base. It was not his physical body, the power of which had surpassed his cultivation base by far too much. Yet now... the distance between them was swiftly decreasing. It meant that Su Ming's true combat abilities would reach a terrifying extent.

Soon after, the instant Su Ming had the second finger in Mastery Realm manifest, he lifted his right hand. With two fingers forming a sword, he swept his hand in the direction of the Vermilion Bird's continent.

With a loud bang, two huge fingers touched each other in the vortex. They instantly gained form, and with a presence even greater than before, they shot through the power of the universe and charged towards the Vermilion Bird's continent.

The faces of the three Almighties beyond the third prince's screen of light on the Vermilion Bird's continent turned pale at that moment. Despair appeared in their eyes, but it was soon replaced by madness. They roared together at the sky, and during that instant, their souls, flesh, blood, and cultivation bases burned. It was especially so for the Almighty who had already seized control of his own laws of fate. The burning of his

soul, flesh, blood, and cultivation base caused his cultivation base to rise to a state that was infinitesimally close to Life Realm.

The three of them turned into three long arcs that charged towards Su Ming's two fingers in the sky.

A loud bang shook the sky and earth. As the people in the area breathed rapidly, Su Ming's two fingers disappeared, but the price for it was... the Almighty in Mastery Realm crumbled into powder. The Almighty in Fate Realm coughed up a dozen mouthfuls of blood in succession. His body instantly withered and his eyes became dull. He moved about thousands of feet backwards, but he could no longer rely on coughing up blood to suppress his injuries. His body was then torn to shreds.

The last Almighty who was infinitesimally close to Life Realm after he burned his soul shuddered. When he moved back, his presence grew dull. The blood he coughed up dyed his robes red. He might not have died, but his organs were already crushed...

While retreating, he seized the air with his right hand without any hesitation, taking a large number of medicinal cores before immediately devouring them. Madness was in his eyes. He believed that as long as he was not instantly killed, then with his level of cultivation, he could persevere and return to the Emperor of Abyss' True World. Like that, perhaps he would still have a chance to survive.

He was betting that Su Ming would not be able to manifest the third finger.

"His power is already equivalent to those who have attained great completion in Mastery Realm, and he has manifested just two fingers. This Dao Kong is..." Ri, Yue, and Xing cast each other glances with incredibly stern expressions.

"There's his physical power as well. Once he fused his cultivation base with his physical body, his two fingers... reached a power that could crush those in Fate Realm. This is... a power equivalent to one strike of those in the initial stage of Life Realm."

"This child has no limits to his future. A person who could devour a garrison in a Striking Land... I thought he was originally in Mastery Realm, but judging by the looks of it... we've underestimated him!"

"His blood shone with gold. If... he can manifest the third finger, we can..." Light shone in the eyes of Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing. There was surprise within them, but it soon disappeared as they reached a consensus.

"If this child can manifest the third finger, then another top-notch warrior will appear in Morning Dao Sect in the future." The old man in blue from the Fourth True World shook his head while speaking calmly. By his side, Reverend Zi Long looked ahead with a glint in his eyes.

"However, he already committed a huge offense. It doesn't matter whether it is True Sacred Yin World or the Emperor of Abyss' True World, both will be great disasters to him..."

"The three True Worlds cannot fight against each other. They will only have a dispute. Even if Dao Kong kills that third prince, the Emperor of Abyss' True World will at most make Morning Dao Sect pay a great price.

"Besides, look at Ri, Yue, and Xing, those three old coots were sending divine thoughts to each other just now. I might not be able to hear what they were saying, but I can guess that they've already become interested in him. They've become interested in Dao Kong.

"I also feel the same way about this Dao Kong..." The old man in blue smiled faintly. As his eyes sparkled, thoughts that no one but he was to privy to formed in his head.

While everyone in the crowd harbored their own thoughts, a loud rumbling rose once again, and all of their thoughts left when they trained their gazes on Su Ming. His location was where the sound had originated.

This time, Su Ming's roar was mixed in the rumble. At the instant he threw his head back and roared, the third finger... appeared on the sun behind him!

Veins popped up on Su Ming's face. The appearance of the third finger might have seemed simple, but in truth, he had used his cultivation base to crash against the wall nearly one hundred times before he finally managed to break it. If it was not because his body was powerful to begin with, then such charges would have surely caused his body to crumble.

This was also one of the reasons why the sight of someone manifesting the third finger was considered rare in the four Great True Worlds!

In truth, practically all the Almightyies in Mastery Realm Su Ming he'd met in the past had only manifested one or two fingers. As of then, he had yet to meet someone who had manifested the third finger.

After all, a person who had only manifested the first finger could also attain great completion in Mastery Realm and could reach Fate Realm. However, the difference between them would have been widened from the instant they stepped into Mastery Realm.

They might all be in Mastery Realm and would have all attained great completion, but a person who had manifested four fingers could kill a person in Mastery Realm who had only manifested one finger!

Almost at the instant Su Ming manifested the third finger, he lowered it. The killing intent in his eyes was laced with madness. It was a steadfast power formed by extreme care towards another person.

It was the source of power which allowed Su Ming to reach a breakthrough and become an Almighty. It was... a form of care because of which he wanted to use his palm to protect everything, defend the people he treasured so that they would not be injured!

"I'd like to see... how you'll withstand this!"

Su Ming raised his right hand and swept through the air with three fingers. The world rumbled, and the three large fingers appeared in the air beyond the vortex. They were thousands of feet long, and a power that allowed them to blot out the sky spread out from them. As the tumbles shook the area, the fingers charged towards the Vermilion Bird's continent with loud booming sounds.

The Almighty in Fate Realm who had burned his soul looked over at it with anguish. Despair showed up in his eyes. The instant Su Ming manifested his third finger, he understood... that he could not block the attack.

He could only be a pebble that was crushed because he had blocked Dao Kong's path as he rose to power. As he laughed brokenly, the Almighty in Fate Realm also came to understand that he no longer had any path for retreat. He roared at the heavens, and the instant the three huge fingers appeared, he rushed forward. When the three fingers were about to touch him, he chose to self-destruct.

Loud booming sounds echoed in the sky, yet the self-destruction from the Almighty from the Emperor of Abyss' True World could not make Su Ming's three fingers to stop for even an instant. They landed on the Vermilion Bird's continent and immediately crashed against the black screen of light. By then, the prince had seized Yu Xuan and dragged her in front of him. His expression was no longer what it had been before.

The entire Vermilion Bird's continent shuddered furiously. The Vermilion Bird supporting it let out a pained screech, and its body sank together with the continent for thousands of feet. The bird then flew out swiftly, no longer supporting the continent. Instead, it stared at Su Ming with a terrified gaze.

The Vermilion Bird might have left, but the continent did not sink. The black screen of light around the third prince expanded swiftly to envelop the entire continent, causing Su Ming's three fingers to crumble.

"Haha! How are you going to break through my Lord Father's protection screen?! I'll remember what happened today!" The third prince laughed loudly and raised his right hand to push it against the ground. Immediately, threads of light appeared in front of him. As they spun, they Branded the ground. At an extreme speed, they formed a Relocation Rune!

"I will need thirty breaths for the Rune to form completely and another twenty the moment I activate it to leave this place. Su Ming, you only have fifty breaths. You can only watch me take this b*tch and leave." The third prince laughed madly with derision as well as contempt in his eyes.

"I don't need fifty breaths."

A menacing glare appeared in Su Ming's eyes. The instant he said those words in a flat voice, he bit the tip of his tongue and coughed up a mouthful of blood. At the same time, he raised his right hand and swept his hand across the blood, causing it to turn into a blood-red Brand. Once he seized it, he pushed it at the center of his brows.

A loud bang shot up. The Brand formed by the mark from his blood and essence was Su Ming sparing no pains to stimulate his potential so that he could cut down on the time required to crush the wall. Even though doing so would cause his body to suffer an even greater impact, but as Ecang, Su Ming did not care.

In the mid of the loud bang, the fourth finger swiftly appeared on the sun behind Su Ming!

"The fourth finger!"

The breathing of all the cultivators in the area quickened at that moment. With his actions, Su Ming had told everything—that he was going to rise to power in one go!

Chapter 1105 My Right Hand! 6

The fourth finger swiftly appeared on the fist-like sun. Su Ming had already activated four of the five fingers. As Su Ming raised his right hand and swung his arm at the Vermilion Bird's continent, a palm with four fingers manifested beyond the vortex formed by the power of the universe.

With a mighty pressure that caused people's hearts to tremble and a will that could destroy the entire universe just to protect something, the four-fingered palm looked as if it had replaced the world. It charged straight for the Vermilion Bird's continent.

Before it even closed in, the sky started shattering layer by layer. The black screen of light on the Vermilion Bird's continent shone with a dazzling light. A cold sneer appeared on the lips of the third prince from the Emperor of Abyss' True World. However, his slightly trembling gaze betrayed that he was terrified at that moment.

Boom!

A shocking sound reverberated in the air. At the instant it traveled through the area, the third prince's arrogant laughter spread out. The black screen of light distorted furiously when the four-fingered palm collided against it, but the palm was the one that fell back and was torn to shreds.

"What can you do to me, Su Ming? Do you care about this b*tch that much?"

While laughing with conceit, the third prince raised his right hand and seized Yu Xuan's neck, lifting her frail body high into the air. With a tight squeeze, he caused pain to immediately appear on her face. However, she still smiled. She did not want Su Ming to see her in pain.

"You care about this b*tch? Haha! So what if you care about her?! She's in my hands. If you have the ability to break the Emperor of Abyss' Screen of Light in the span of a few dozen breaths, then do so and try to save her.

"Su Ming, if you can't do it in a few dozen breaths, then I will take her home with me.

"But if you're willing to kneel down and beg me, destroy your own cultivation base, and dig out your heart as a form of respect, I will consider letting this b*tch, who will not live for more than a hundred years if she leaves the Emperor of Abyss' True World, to stay with you. Come on!"

The third prince tightened his grip. Veins popped up on his face. As he laughed madly, he stared at Yu Xuan enduring her pain, then at Su Ming whose eyes had went red. The prince felt incredibly delighted, and his laughter grew even more conceited.

He saw the red in Su Ming's eyes and sensed the madness in him, but he did not care. As long as the screen of light was not broken, then in a few dozen more breaths, he would return to the Emperor of Abyss' True World. If the man was conceited enough to chase after him there, the third prince would let him know what despair was.

Su Ming had returned from his destructive, crimson state, but at that moment, after the taunts of the third prince, red covered all the white in his eyes. At the same time, red light spread out from him when he saw Yu Xuan doing her best to smile even though it was clear that she was in pain. As he watched the woman who was once a mischievous girl in the past, Su Ming felt his heart aching in pain.

He also saw resolve and determination in her face as she did her best to smile. There was deep steadfastness within her.

It was a steadfast resolution proclaiming that: If we cannot be together, then I will wait for you in the netherworld.

The pain made Su Ming feel as if his heart had been torn apart and would not recover. Everything in his eyes grew crimson. There was only one thought in his head at that moment: Break the screen of light, kill the third prince, save Yu Xuan.

In the mid of his madness and his form of care, Su Ming charged forward without a single word... and left the vortex formed by the power of the universe. At the instant he stepped out, he raised his right hand, and his cultivation base roared to attempt to manifest the fifth finger.

Many attempts were completed as Su Ming charged forward... but even if the blood in his body was raging violently, he still could not break through the invisible wall leading to the manifestation of the fifth finger.

It was as if there was always a little left lacking.

'Manifest, fifth finger!'

As a blood-red glare shone in Su Ming's bloodshot eyes, he struck his storage bag with his left hand, and the poisonous wasp with the God Ascension Nectar immediately appeared on his palm. At the instant he clenched his left fist, the poison sting pierced his flesh.

God Ascension Nectar entered his system, and it immediately swam through his blood. As it spread out and fused with his cultivation base, a loud bang rang out in Su Ming's head.

Another attempt to break through was executed in a frenzy.

But... he was still lacking a little. The now irrational Su Ming sent out a divine thought to the poisonous wasp to have it inject even more God Ascension Nectar into him, and immediately... an amount hundreds of times greater than what had caused him to attract the swarm of Waves of Tears in Divine Essence Star Ocean was injected into his body.

Booming sounds echoed in Su Ming's head; they were like thunderous roars shaking his soul so much that he felt as if he was about to shatter. Yet at the same time, a presence that caused all the cultivators and even the old man in blue from the Fourth True World to stand erupted from Su Ming's body.

As it did so, Su Ming circulated all of his cultivation base. At that moment, he might have seemed normal, but in truth, as his cultivation base continuously erupted and the God Ascension Nectar spread through him, his body continued swelling. This could not be seen with the naked eye. However, Su Ming had a feeling that at the extent his body swelled up, he would burst apart in less than three breaths.

During the first breath, Su Ming bled from his ears, nose, mouth, and eyes. He circulated all his cultivation base and continued attacking the invisible barrier leading to the fifth finger, intending to use this method to forcefully break through it.

During the second breath, an intense pain that could not be put into words spread out through him, causing Su Ming to feel as if every single part of his body was about to shatter. Sweat broke out on his skin, and a strong sense of danger rose in his heart. It was the feeling of upcoming death. Once his body crumbled, his physical body would not be the only thing that would disintegrate. His soul, too, would be gone.

This was a choice between death or breaking the wall to the fifth finger. A rational person would have definitely not chosen to do this, but at that moment, Su Ming no longer possessed any form of rationality. There was... only extreme concern towards another person!

With great effort, he circulated his entire cultivation base and continuously attacked the invisible wall. When the third breath arrived and Su Ming's body surpassed its limit of the swelling up it could contain, it started showing signs of crumbling. The instant he was about to burst like a water balloon... a loud bang shot into the air!

Once a large amount of water was injected into the water balloon... What would erupt would either be Su Ming's body... or he would break through the wall!

At the instant that loud boom reverberated in the air, the shadow of the fifth finger appeared on the sun behind Su Ming. At the instant this happened, the crazed power in Su Ming's body seemed to have found a vent. It surged towards the illusory fifth finger on the sun, causing it to instantly gain corporeal form. As loud booming sounds surged into the air, a scene that shocked countless cultivators in the area appeared in the sky.

Up above, there was a fist-like sun with all five fingers, but it no longer looked like a sun. It was... a palm that had unfurled its fingers from the position of a fist!

At the same time, a tri-colored light spread out from the real physical body of Su Ming's clenched right fist in the territory of the Immortals' Union. It instantly filled his entire right arm. As it shuddered lightly, a power that seemed to come from Su Ming's physical body rose, and he looked as if he was about to wake up because of it!

The palm symbolized protection, Su Ming's steadfastness, and also his care as well as the form of protection he had come to understand.

Buzzing sounds rose from the area used for the Anointment Ceremony in Morning Dao Sect. Powerful light shone in the eyes of the old man in blue from the Fourth True World. There was a form of concentration in that light, along with incredibly great admiration. His breathing quickened in an indistinct manner, which showed just how shocked he was in his heart.

Reverend Zi Long sucked in a sharp breath. There was disbelief on his face. However, only he alone among all the other people in the area knew just how crazed Su Ming's actions were, because he knew that Su Ming had used God Ascension Nectar. This was a secret he had told no one, and it was precisely because of it and that he had once sucked in a small whiff of it that he knew how Su Ming had forcibly manifested his fifth finger when he'd seemed unable to do it before. God Ascension Nectar was definitely at work in this.

When he thought of the terrors of the God Ascension Nectar, respect appeared in Reverend Zi Long's eyes.

When Old You and Ming from True Sacred Yin World saw Su Ming manifest the fourth finger, their hearts had let out a thump, but they could still remain calm. However, when they saw him manifesting the fifth finger, the two of them sucked in a deep breath and cast each other a glance. Both of them saw the complicated emotions the other was feeling.

They knew that once Su Ming manifested his fifth finger, then unless there was a large amount of concrete evidence to prove that he was not Dao Kong... there was no sect in the universe which would give up on a person who had such talent, even if they suspected his origins. It was almost certain that as long as they did not die, then the chances of disciples like this stepping into Death Realm were much higher than of other people.

In fact... there was even a hint of possibility that they might surpass Death Realm and become Sublime Paragons!

To any True World, this was an indescribable treasure, and they would absolutely not give up on it. In fact, even if they had concrete evidence against them, they could still make changes to their policy. Of course, the prerequisite for this was that the person was not their enemy.

Yet clearly, Su Ming had become a Dynast, killed tens of thousands of cultivators from the Immortals' Union, and even returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. This already made it certain that to Morning Dao Sect... he was not an enemy, because to Morning Dao Sect, their greatest enemy was the Immortals' Union.

And more importantly, this person had already received Progenitor Dao Chen's blessing and had greeted the Progenitor. There was... no longer any problems with everything else concerning him.

At the instant discussions rose in the area with a buzz, Su Ming had already made the sun behind him form a full palm. Heinous killing intent and a monstrous red glare shone in his eyes. When he raised his right hand, what appeared this time was not an illusory palm, but a palm formed by the sun behind him charging forward with a loud bang. It shot through his body and rushed straight for the Vermilion Bird's continent!

Chapter 1106 My Right Hand! 7

That palm was the manifestation of Su Ming's full power at that moment. It was his strongest attack, and he charged right after it.

It was the release of Su Ming's physical strength, the strongest power he had gathered together in his life after he fused his cultivation base with his physical body!

At the same time, a malicious presence spread out from him. That malicious presence seemed to have come from an ancient, ferocious spirit. It filled the air, but remained indistinct. Only Su Ming knew... that it was Ecang's presence!

It was ancient and malicious, and it symbolized Su Ming's Ecang erupting with power once it became complete.

His strike caused the weather to change, the air to look like it was about to freeze, and that a crack that formed would not be able to heal.

The strike also caused the pupils of all the people in the area to shrink. Their hearts trembled, because the attack... was no longer something that could be executed by those in Mastery Realm, and neither was it something that could be released by Almighties in Fate Realm. The released power had already surpassed Mastery Realm, Fate Realm, and had reached... Life Realm!

Even though this was not the power brought by those who had attained great completion in Life Realm, it was still an attack belonging to those in the middle stage of Life Realm!

Yet that was not the most terrifying aspect. After all, there were people present who were already in Death Realm. What caused them to be in fear was because Su Ming's real level of cultivation... was just that of someone who had just reached Mastery Realm!

Their fear was born from the fact that they did not understand Su Ming. If they did, they would not feel fear, but shock!

If Su Ming could be in control of the laws of fate, he could make his strike reach the power equivalent to those in the later stage of Life Realm and retrieve his real physical body. Then he, who had understood the laws of fate... could make his strike reach the state that was infinitesimally close to the power exhibited by those of Death Realm!

The moment Su Ming stepped into Mastery Realm and became an Almighty, he could truly be considered powerful. He was no longer a weakling and a weak cultivator who could only be manipulated by the others as they liked.

All those who tried to twist his fate would have to suffer consequences. They would have to pay a great price, and it would be so great that perhaps even they would be unable to bear it.

His strike descended on the screen of light around the Vermilion Bird's continent. Within it was the third prince who had a crazed expression on his face. He had confidence in the screen of light, and as he continued laughing madly, he gripped Yu Xuan's neck even tighter. The Rune had already almost completely formed. As the light grew to a dazzling degree, the third prince raved at the sky.

"I'm waiting for you here, come on!"

What answered him was a monstrous bang that shook many of the cultivators in the area so much that they bled from their ears. A violent impact swept into all directions with loud banging sounds.

The palm formed by Su Ming's cultivation base touched the screen of light left behind by the Emperor from the Emperor of Abyss' True World for his descendants. His strike caused the screen of light to instantly distort. A large number of cracks formed at the spot where his palm had landed, and they spread through the whole screen at a fast speed. As they did so, the top part of the screen sank.

It looked like it contained an elastic force. Yet the palm formed by Su Ming's cultivation base continued pushing down on the screen, charging towards the third prince on the Vermilion Bird's continent.

This shocking scene caused the third prince's expression to change. His raving laughter immediately came to a stop. At the instant disbelief appeared in his eyes, a loud booming sound reverberated in the air. When the palm formed by Su Ming's cultivation base pushed the screen of light, about ten thousand feet downwards, more cracks spread, and the palm disappeared.

Su Ming had used all his strength, but could only do so much; he still could not make the screen shatter. However... at the instant the palm formed by Su Ming's sun disintegrated, he rushed out from behind it and raised his right hand to push down on the sunken screen of light.

Booming sounds rose into the air. Red filled Su Ming's eyes. With madness, the power of his physical body reached its peak, and the malicious presence around him grew to an astonishing degree. At the instant he touched the sunken screen and booming sounds could be heard, the screen was unable to bounce back. It was pushed forward by Su Ming's right hand and continued sinking even deeper towards the ground.

The third prince's expression instantly turned pale. He stared at Su Ming, who was above him in the sky and was separated from him by the screen of light, but was currently pushing it and making it descend. His mind instantaneously turned blank. With

a shudder, he pulled on Yu Xuan without any hesitation and swiftly entered the Relocation Rune. His face was stark pale, and there was fear that had never once appeared on his face before. He struck the Rune with his left hand.

"Damn it, hurry up and activate! Just activate already!"

Cold sweat broke out on the third prince's forehead, and a strong feeling that he was about to die rose within him. He roared and struck the Rune with his left hand. Immediately, it let out a dazzling light as it started spinning slowly.

Red filled Su Ming's eyes. Pushing the screen of light so that it would sink might have seemed easy, but in truth, the screen of light was something that the Emperor of Abyss from the Emperor of Abyss' True World had personally Branded on his descendants, and its goal was to prevent them being killed.

If the screen could be destroyed easily, then the princes of the Emperor of Abyss' True World might have all died a long time ago.

Even if Su Ming was at his strongest at that moment, he still could not destroy the screen of light. Even moving it was proving to be increasingly difficult.

He pushed the screen so that it would continuously approach the ground. He could see Yu Xuan, could see the third prince who he absolutely wanted to kill. He saw their expressions, and also saw the fear in the third prince's eyes.

Su Ming approached the ground. From the great distance before, he came until he was only a hundred thousand feet away from them. Then, the distance shrank to ten thousand feet before it eventually turned to one thousand feet. In the eyes of the third prince, Su Ming had already arrived, but the Rune beneath his feet had only partially activated. It would need another dozen breaths before he could be sent away. After all, this was not a normal Relocation, but a Relocation between True Worlds, that was why the speed was slightly slower.

When he saw that Su Ming was about to close in, the third prince's expression twisted. With a roar at the sky, he grabbed Yu Xuan, and just as he was about to fling all caution to the wind, he was suddenly stunned before he laughed loudly. There was madness contained in his laughter, along with endless mockery.

"Su Ming, what can you even do to me? You can't break open this screen of light. It'll be even better if you're just one thousand feet away from me. You'll be able to see even more clearly how I'll leave."

As the third prince laughed, he sighed in relief in his heart. He saw that Su Ming had reached the limit of what he could do when he pushed the screen until it was only one thousand feet away from him. Not only did the screen not continue sinking, it even started showing signs that it was about to bounce back.

Veins popped up on Su Ming's face. The screen of light was so strong that even if he used his full power, he could only do so much. He could not break the screen, and because of it, he could not take Yu Xuan back. It was just as the third prince said, he could only watch helplessly as Yu Xuan was taken away.

The blood-red light in Su Ming's eyes reached a heinous degree, but no matter how he attacked the screen, he still could not stop it from slowly raising. The scene changed from him pushing the screen to him being pushed back by the screen. Gradually, he left the area where the third prince's Rune was. From the previous one thousand feet, the distance between them became two thousand feet, and it was still widening.

The crazed laughter from the third prince fell into Su Ming's ears, and his heart trembled as it ached in pain. Sharp stabs of pain traveled up right hand which he used to push the screen of light, and it was turning into a bloody mess. His bones were continuously being crushed. Compared to the screen of light, his power seemed like it was no longer able to put a fight.

'I can still become stronger. As long as I can get my real physical body back, I can become even stronger!'

"I won't accept this! With my power, with my cultivation base, how can I not even break a screen of light formed by a divine ability by the Emperor of Abyss?! I WON'T ACCEPT THIS!"

Su Ming threw his head back and let out the most astonishing roar that he had never done since he'd come to Morning Dao Sect.

It contained Su Ming's bewilderment when he was in Dark Mountain and when he was in the land of Berserkers. It contained his anguish when he left the ninth summit and stepped into the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. It contained his madness as he barely escaped death when he was in Divine Essence Star Ocean. It also contained his boundless resentment towards Su Xuan Yi due to his origins.

At that moment, all of that was released violently in his roar. There was also his pain and his refusal to admit that he could not save Yu Xuan.

As the roar reverberated in the air, it traveled through all nine continents in the first plane to the ninety-nine continents in the second plane, the 999 continents in the third plane, the 9,999 continents in the fourth plane, Dao Ocean, all dimensions in Morning Dao Sect, and it even reached as faint murmur Su Xuan Yi's isolation grounds.

The isolated Su Xuan Yi shuddered. However, soon, he closed his eyes again... and a sigh left his lips when he closed his eyes again.

As the roar echoed in the sky, the ears of the ten million cultivators rang. While they were in shock, Su Ming's real physical body which lay in the territory of the Immortals'

Union shuddered violently, especially his right hand. A tri-colored light spread out from it, and a power that had always been sleeping in the body looked as if it was about to be awakened in an unseen manner at that moment!

"I WANT TO BECOME STRONGER!!!"

At the instant Su Ming shouted those words, dazzling light erupted from his real physical body's right hand. At the instant it appeared, a large number of figures instantly appeared around his real physical body, but before they could even do anything, the right hand of Su Ming's real physical body... disappeared in the light!

His whole right arm disappeared along with it the next moment!

At the same time, Su Ming's bloody right hand which held back the screen of light in Morning Dao Sect was torn to shreds with a loud bang. However, a new arm suddenly replaced it at an indescribable speed. Soon after, a power that was even greater than the strongest power Su Ming had been able to muster spilled out violently with a shocking bang from the right hand which seemed to have regrown in a heartbeat.

Thunder roared. The wind and clouds moved back. The chill of midwinter, the light of autumn's red, the flames of the scorching summer appeared at the same time. When they intersected with each other, for the first time ever... the presence of spring appeared around Su Ming's right hand!

Spring was the time when all things come back to life, and it was the final step in moving from death to life. And signs of it manifesting showed up at that instant!

Su Ming used the right hand which had appeared as if it had regrown and seized the air in front of him. As the world roared, the light of the Rune around the third prince and Yu Xuan spun. At the instant they were about to be Relocated, the screen of light blocking Su Ming's path was torn apart.

It crumbled with a bang, and his body descended at an indescribable speed. He lifted his right hand and pierced the light from the Rune. As if he could move through True Worlds, he seized the third prince, who was already halfway through his Relocation, and with a ferocious face yanked him back!

Chapter 1107 She Doesn't Suit You

A shrill scream of pain tumbled out from the mouth of the third prince of the Emperor of Abyss' True World. That scream of pain contained both terror and strong disbelief.

He clearly remembered that just one breath ago, Su Ming had still been beyond the screen of light and he himself had already been Relocated halfway through and was in

an illusory state. In just a few more breaths, he would have returned to the Emperor of Abyss' True World.

Everything had happened too fast, so fast that the moment he screamed and disbelief appeared on his face, he felt as if time had flowed back right before his eyes. His body was seized by a power so great that he could not fight back against. It grabbed the back of his neck and yanked him out of the Relocation Rune.

At the same time, Su Ming swung his right arm, and blood-red branches swiftly extended from it. At the instant they spread out, they charged towards Yu Xuan and caught her.

All of this was originally supposed to be perfect. During the most critical moment, Su Ming retrieved Destiny's right arm and broke the Emperor of Abyss' screen of light, stopped the conceited third prince from leaving, and was about to catch Yu Xuan, changing her destiny with her hands.

Everything should have been so...

But...

Fate was unpredictable. At that instant, due to someone changing certain things, almost at the instant the tree branches spread out from Su Ming's right hand and were about to catch Yu Xuan so that she would not be Relocated to the Emperor of Abyss' True World, a power that Su Ming was familiar with suddenly descended from the sky. With extreme ease, it shot into the tunnel within the Relocation Rune between Su Ming's right hand and Yu Xuan.

The power which was familiar to Su Ming did not come to help him... The instant the branches extended from his right hand to touch Yu Xuan, that power spread outwards, and without a single sound, it let out a ripple that even the current Su Ming would find difficult to handle in the tunnel created by the Relocation Rune.

When it spread out, it caused a tremor so great in the branches Su Ming wanted to use to pull Yu Xuan that they fell backwards, causing her body to be swept away. In an instant... she fused into the air and was Relocated back to the Emperor of Abyss' True World.

"You!"

Su Ming's eyes turned red. Madness erupted violently in his mind. If the power had come from someone else or even from the Emperor of Abyss' True World, then even if Su Ming would have descended into a frenzy, he would not have been as enraged as he was at that moment.

It was impossible to put his anger into words. The boundless resentment in his heart filled his entire body, causing a black vortex to immediately appear in the area around him.

"She will be safe in the Emperor of Abyss' True World... but she doesn't suit you."

A sigh echoed in the air. When it gradually faded away, Su Ming's roar shook the sky. The Vermilion Bird's continent let out a bang. As it trembled, the Relocation Rune instantly started showing signs of crumbling. It then broke down into pieces. Before that happened though, the third prince was dragged out by Su Ming.

Yet... even though he dragged out the third prince... Yu Xuan could still only become an afterimage in his memory.

Su Ming trembled. He lifted his head and stared at the sky. At the same time a broken smile appeared on his face. He laughed fiercely. With extreme grief and indignation, he laughed at the heavens, the world, his own bloodline, and himself.

His laughter contained despair along with an intense pain as if his heart had been torn apart.

The person who had prevented Su Ming from catching Yu Xuan was not an outsider... that familiar power... it belonged to Su Xuan Yi, Progenitor Dao Chen!

Su Ming continued to laugh brokenly. His expression was ferocious, however and his body trembled. After experiencing the extreme madness, a deadly still air surrounded him.

It was akin to death itself, similar to the one he carried under the mask forced on him by Yin Death Region. In time, when he'd gotten rid of the mask, that deadly still air had also disappeared, but at that moment, it returned. Su Ming's personalities changed from just gold, crimson, and gray. Another color had been added... black!

Black hair, black eyes. He looked exactly the same as he did when the three personalities had yet to manifest. However, even though he might look the same, in truth... he had changed completely.

At that moment, the dead look was formed by the intense pain of his heart being torn apart, the indescribable anger, and the grief as well as indignation that made him feel as if his heart was about to be devoured.

"Doesn't suit me..." Su Ming mumbled. He did not shout and neither did he growl. Instead, he stared at the sky. After a long while, he lowered his head. He still had the third prince from the Emperor of Abyss' True World in his right hand.

The third prince was shuddering at that moment. In his eyes, Su Ming was the most terrifying nightmare in his life. He instinctively wanted to tell him the identity of his father or to appear strong even though his heart was trembling in fear, or just plead for mercy.

The expressions of Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing changed. Clearly, they did not expect that Su Ming would truly be able to break the screen of light. At that moment, when they saw that the third prince of the Emperor of Abyss' True World was in Su Ming's hand, the three of them immediately took a step forward.

"Dao Kong, do not kill that person!" Sect Master Yue said hastily. The trios cultivation had already reached a monstrous level, and with one move, they instantly closed in. However, while they might be fast, Su Ming could be even faster when he wanted to kill someone.

To the current Su Ming, the third prince was just an ant. At the instant he lowered his head and Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing arrived... he tightened his grip, and seven ripples were sent into the third prince's body in succession.

The first ripple instantly crushed all his bones, causing immense pain. At the instant the third prince let out a shrill scream of pain, Su Ming pushed his left hand over the prince's mouth and seized it so that his screams could not be voice, thereby turning it into an even more intense pain.

Once all the third prince's bones were crushed, the second ripple reduced them all to powder, causing the third prince to become a mess of flesh. If it was not because Su Ming kept his grip on the prince, the man would have definitely fallen into a puddle.

The third, fourth, and the fifth ripples tore the third prince's skin, melted his flesh... and evaporated his blood.

The sixth and seventh waves crushed his soul. It was shredded forcefully, causing him to taste indescribable pain for a few breaths before he died. Throughout it all, Su Ming's left hand was held tightly over the third prince's mouth so that he could not let out even a single sound... When Su Ming let go of his hand, the third prince disappeared. He had already turned into ashes that fell to the ground.

Su Ming's eyes were dull, and he was silent. The breathing of all the cultivators in the area quickened at that moment, and all their gazes gathered on Su Ming.

After a long time, he looked at his right hand. Anguish appeared on his face. His right hand could bring forth a power that was infinitesimally close to those who had attained great completion in Life Realm, which was why he had been able to tear apart the trembling screen of light... but even so, he was still unable to stop the power of Su Xuan Yi. And for the second time... he was unable to catch Yu Xuan's hand.

"Doesn't suit me...? What right do you have to say that?" Su Ming mumbled.

His expression turned even more dreary, but there was a vast amount of life force that made it seem as if he was being reborn spreading out from his right hand. That presence was incredibly ancient, as if it had been lying in him for countless years.

Su Ming slowly raised his foot and walked into the sky. He left the Vermilion Bird's continent behind, and as he moved higher up, he did not spare a glance at the area around him. He had a place he wanted to go to—Dao Chen's isolation grounds. He wanted to ask exactly why Su Xuan Yi had said that!

Flame Fiends' Progenitor immediately took a few steps back when he was before Su Ming. His pupils shrank, and he stared at him with a hint of fear. He could sense that something was incredibly off about Su Ming at that moment, so whatever he did, he could not provoke him. Even if Su Ming looked as if he was just moving forward and he was a follower, at that instant, Flame Fiends' Progenitor still chose to retreat.

He was not the only one who did so. The Morning Dao Sect disciples in the area as well as the cultivators from True Sacred Yin World moved back at that moment to clear a path for him.

"Doesn't suit me..." Dense blood capillaries popped out in Su Ming's eyes. When they were seen in contrast to his black hair, he radiated a crazed feeling that screaming at the others to not to get close to him.

Old You and Ming cast each other glances, and Old Ming spoke languidly with a mirthless smile. "So is this how you lot from Morning Dao Sect treat your guests? The third prince of the Emperor of Abyss' True World came to congratulate you on anointing your Dynasts and even brought gifts, but this Dao Kong of yours killed him. As for you, you only watched. No one even tried to stop him.

"Morning Dao Sect, this is what you are, indeed! I'd like to know what the Emperor of Abyss will do once he learns of this ."

Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing had sullen expressions on their faces. They might have already made their decision, but even they thought that the situation right then was a little troublesome. Su Ming had attacked far too quickly just then, and they hadn't thought that he would actually be able to break the screen of light. If that had been the truth, everything would have been much simpler, but not only was Su Ming able to break the screen of light, he also killed the third prince.

This caused the matter to turn a little complicated.

"Dao Kong, you went a little overboard in this matter... there are outsiders here... Oh well, go and isolate yourself in Dao Ocean for five hundred years. This is your punishment. As for the Emperor of Abyss' True World..." Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing sighed in their hearts and moved in front of Su Ming to block his path.

The three of them cast each other a glance, and all of them were troubled by the gargantuan price they would have to pay for this. If there were no outsiders, then even if Dao Kong had killed the third prince, they would not have been bothered. There would have been plenty of methods to handle the problem.

However, Old You and Ming were clearly going to use this and fan the flames, immediately making the matter into a troublesome problem. However, to Morning Dao Sect, the price they had to pay compared to Dao Kong being able to manifest the five fingers was nothing. The fact that he was able to do that immediately turned him into an incredibly valuable resource for the sect.

This resource was equivalent to them obtaining an Almighty in Death Realm, which was why they had changed their earlier plan.

"If there were no outsiders present..." Su Ming came to a halt and raised his bloodshot and crazed eyes.

Chapter 1108 You and Ming's Disaster

Almost the instant Su Ming raised his head, he took a swift step to the side, and he was so fast that he instantly charged at Old You and Ming from True Sacred Yin World.

Su Ming needed to vent his frustration. If he did not let out the heinous resentment and anger within him, then he had a feeling that his body would tear open and collapse.

He needed to vent. Both his heart and his soul needed to let out his frustrations in a violent manner. He wanted to see blood being spilled

The instant Su Ming moved, the expressions of Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing instantly changed. Just as they were about to chase after Su Ming, a long string of laughter came from the continent where the Fourth True World stayed. The old man in blue took a step forward at that moment and instantly appeared in front of Sect Masters Ri, Yue and Xing. He had the ghost of a smile on his face as he wrapped his fist in his palm lightly towards the three of them.

"My friends, why don't we spar a little?"

"Ling Hai, what's the meaning of this?!" Sect Master Yue demanded with a frown.

"I'm not planning anything. I just miss the three of you very much and want to spar with you."

The old man in blue smiled and swung his arm. Immediately, a roaring sea manifested, then swept outwards, straight towards Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing.

"Blood Ocean Hell!"

The old man in blue formed a seal with his hands, bit his tongue, and coughed up a large mouthful of blood. It immediately fused with the ocean which had manifested around him, dying it red. Once it turned into a sea of blood, it surrounded the area and became an existence akin to a seal, making it difficult for even Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing to rush out.

'Laddy, I've given up a lot of my assets to help you. I used up nearly five thousand years worth of my cultivation base just to muster that one mouthful of sealing blood for this sea of blood. Only with it could I trap the three for an hour with my power alone.'

'You'll have to work hard... Commit more irrecoverable, heinous atrocities. It's good that you killed the third prince of the Emperor of Abyss' True World. It's also good that you destroyed True Sacred Yin World's camp in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, but it's not enough. You have to kill Old You and Ming, and you have to slaughter your way into the Emperor of Abyss' True World as well as murder your way into True Sacred Yin World.'

'It'd be best if you could bring out a Sublime Paragon of a True World. Only then... would it be enough.'

The face of the old man in blue was slightly pale. Clearly, trapping Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing was incredibly difficult for him. However, there was a powerful light shining in his eyes, and it was filled... with expectation.

At the instant the old man in blue trapped Sect Masters Ri, Yue and Xing of Morning Dao Sect and the expressions of the people all around changed, Su Ming turned into a long arc and charged towards Old You and Ming with black smoke spreading out of his body.

"You're just asking for death!"

Old You and Ming's eyes sparkled. Old You smiled coldly and took a step forward. He looked so old that he looked as if he had just crawled out of a coffin, but he raised his right hand and formed a seal before he pointed forward.

Immediately, wisps of cold air rose from his fingertips. A vast power that was so ghastly it looked as if it could freeze space itself appeared with cracking sounds. Countless ice flowers instantly appeared in the air in front of Old You. They were all connected to one another. As more of them spread out, they formed a huge face of a ghost in the air, right in front of Su Ming.

With a ferocious expression, it charged at him.

A power that was just a step away from that of Death Realm erupted with a bang from the ghost face. The same presence was also released from Old You's body.

When Su Ming was about to touch the ghost face, powerful killing intent shone in his eyes. He raised his right hand, and powerful might that was as astonishing as the ghost face's instantly came from his right hand. The moment he was about to be hit, Su Ming furled his fingers into a fist and threw a fist forward.

The world roared. The sky shuddered. Su Ming took three staggering steps back, but the ghost face made of ice flowers in front of him instantly collapsed.

Su Ming forced himself to stop. When he rushed forward again, a heinous, malicious presence followed him. It was his Ecang self manifesting. Old You narrowed his eyes, and with a cold harrumph, he formed a seal in front of himself before he swiftly pushed his palms together and pointed at Su Ming.

"Sinister Dark Mass!"

A low growl came from Old You's mouth. When he pointed forward, a jolt ran through his body, and overlapping shadows seemed to cover him. When they rushed forward, they turned into an old man. He had an illusory body, but at the instant he stepped towards Su Ming, he raised his right hand and formed a seal before pointing at the center of his own brows. Immediately, a bang shot out from his body and he turned into a ghost face that charged towards Su Ming.

At the same time, overlapping shadows appeared on Old You again. This time, ten illusory shadows flew out at the same time. They were all middle-aged men, and all of them looked the same. They were rather similar to Old You, and seemed to be versions of his younger self.

When Su Ming crashed against the ghost face formed by the old man's illusory shadow, the ten middle-aged shadows turned into ten ghost faces that charged towards him.

If that was all, it would not have posed a problem for Su Ming, but overlapping shadows appeared for the third time around Old You, who still remained unmoving in the air. Then, one hundred illusory shadows rushed out. Each of them was a young man, and they all turned into one hundred gigantic ghost faces in the sky before charging towards Su Ming.

It seemed as if there was no end to them. When overlapping shadows appeared for the fourth time, the shadows of five hundred teenagers rushed out. They spread out, surrounded the area, and turned into ghost faces simultaneously. The whole sky seemed to be filled with them.

The ghost faces opened their mouths and roared before they charged towards Su Ming. Booming sounds rang out without end. When he saw the countless ghost faces rushing

towards him in a mad rush, a glint shone in Su Ming's eyes. The instant the enemies came close, he turned around, raised his right hand, and struck his chest.

This was the rebounding force he had learned from the Predecessor of Dao Ocean. With Su Ming's raised level of cultivation, the instant his right hand landed on his chest, a deafening roar reverberated in the air.

A wave of impact rushed through the area from Su Ming. When it swept outwards, all the incoming ghost faces let out shrill roars. Then, like fog being swept apart by a violent gust of wind, they scattered.

Blood trickled out of the corners of Su Ming's mouth, but he did not wipe it off. With blood dyeing his lips red, he threw his head back and let out a roar to vent his anger and resentment. As he did so, Old Ming beside Old You let out a cold harrumph. With one move, he instantly disappeared. When he reappeared, he was already behind Su Ming. He raised his right hand and touched Su Ming's back lightly.

At the instant he did so, a ray of dark light appeared at his fingertips. That light was strange and enchanting, and it could be vaguely seen that there were countless existences resembling ghosts within it. They let out soundless roars, and as their expressions distorted, they charged towards Su Ming's back along the old man's finger.

They looked like they wanted to tear Su Ming, rush into him to devour his flesh, blood, and soul.

Su Ming could not avoid this strike, but he didn't even consider doing it. As he turned around, he raised his right hand and formed a seal before he spread his fingers. Immediately, a huge hand manifested under his feet. As Su Ming clenched his right hand once more, the huge, illusory palm furlled itself into a fist as well to hold Su Ming within it. It then collided against Old Ming's incoming finger.

Booming sounds rose into the air. The huge palm holding Su Ming shattered layer by layer until he was revealed within. He coughed up a mouthful of blood, but Old Ming shuddered and took a few staggering steps backwards too. Blood trickled out of the corners of his mouth.

But almost the instant he moved back, a freezing glare shone in his eyes. He formed a seal with both hands, and nearly one thousand overlapping shadows flew out with a bang from his body. They turned into nearly one thousand ghost faces in the area. As they roared, they rushed towards Su Ming, and Old Ming also took a step forward. This time, when he raised his right hand, an oil lamp appeared on his palm. It burned with dark green flames.

He held up the oil lamp, opened his mouth, and blew at the dark green flame. It erupted with a bang and turned into a phoenix that rushed towards Su Ming with a shrill shriek.

Old You and Ming attacked at the same time, and they were determined to kill. When they attacked, all of the skills they executed were great divine abilities. There was not a hint of them intending to be careless in their actions. They had even sealed up all of Su Ming's paths to head forward or retreat. When they managed to do so, Old You and Ming roared at the same time towards the sky.

Immediately, a presence that surged to the skies erupted from their bodies. At the same time, two green pearls rushed out from the top of their skulls. When they floated out they spun swiftly and appeared at Su Ming's sides. The two pearls shone before turning into two huge bodies.

They had black skin and bald heads, but the ripples of power equivalent to those in Life Realm spread out from their bodies. If it was not because they had no spark of life in their eyes, making it clear that they were puppets, they would definitely be regarded as cultivators.

They clearly were... two puppets in Life Realm, puppets that were incredibly rare and extremely valuable in all of the True Worlds!

"Sacred Slaves!"

The old man in blue narrowed his eyes. True Sacred Yin World was the most famous among the four Great True Worlds for its Puppetry Art, and almost all of the divine abilities in True Sacred Yin World's Sacred Yin Sect were related to puppets.

Creating puppets and using them to train had practically become the essential Art of Sacred Yin Sect. The two puppets were You and Ming's origin substitutes, which they had created by having their entire cultivation base merge together.

Front, back, left, and right—Su Ming was surrounded by enemies from all directions. The two puppets might exude the power belonging to those in Life Realm, but in their hands they held two huge black blades. They were entirely black, and there were countless vengeful souls surrounding them. They exuded... a presence that made even Su Ming feel great danger.

Those were... two extraordinary blades!

Booming sounds rose into the air, and divine abilities closed in on Su Ming. At the instant he was surrounded and about to suffer attacks aimed to kill from all directions, he closed his eyes, raised his right hand, and pushed up against the sky!

"Fifth kiln!"

A loud rumble surged into the skies, and the entire Morning Dao Sect shuddered. At the same time, a huge crack appeared in the sky. As it spread out of nowhere, tearing through the sky, the fifth kiln which had hidden itself away in Divine Essence Star

Ocean shuddered. A sea of fire spilled out from it, and the countless living spirits in the kiln roared at the sky.

During that instant, the fifth kiln moved swiftly and disappeared from Divine Essence Star Ocean. When it reappeared... it was in Morning Dao Sect, and at that moment, the hearts of all ten million cultivators were shaken as their gazes were directed at the crack in the sky!

Chapter 1109 I'll Allow This!

When the fifth kiln appeared, all the cultivators in Morning Dao Sect immediately sucked in sharp breaths. Most of them had never seen the fifth kiln before.

It was an existence that was an incredibly mysterious entity even in Divine Essence Star Ocean, and the cultivators present were incredibly unfamiliar with it. There were plenty of people who had never even heard of the fifth kiln before the old man who returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence had mentioned it.

After all, Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos was just too big. The things the cultivators knew about were naturally related to their own paths of cultivation as well as their experiences. Without a high enough level of cultivation, it was impossible for them to learn about too many secrets. Similarly, without enough experiences, it was also impossible to learn about these things.

It was the case for Su Ming as well. When he first stepped into the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, he had not know about any of these things. Other people might have different backgrounds compared to him, but at least in this matter, they were all the same.

The sky roared, and the air distorted. The sound of something being ripped open shook the sky and earth. Countless bolts of lightning swam in the sky, tearing the crack wider. The fifth kiln descended from it with loud booming sounds and a presence that surged through the air. Wherever it spread, the air would collapse. The entire sky was torn apart, as if there was no power in the world which could stop the fifth kiln from appearing for the first time in True Morning Dao World.

A mighty pressure so strong it was difficult to describe with words spread out violently from the kiln at that moment. It landed in the hearts of all the cultivators in Morning Dao Sect, causing them to beat furiously. Everyone clearly felt a pressure that caused their bodies to tremble.

The sea of fire surrounded the area as they changed color. The fifth kiln broke through everything and descended. Even though the sea of fire did not spread out, the power of the heat contained in the mighty pressure seemed to be able to melt all gazes, causing

all those who saw the sea of fire to feel their eyes sting in pain. There were also quite a number of people who could not stop tears from flowing down their faces.

All of this was because of the fifth kiln's shocking appearance.

"The fifth kiln!"

A glint appeared in Old You and Ming's eyes. The two of them lifted their eyes at the same time and fixed them on the fifth kiln. Based on the words of the Almighty in Life Realm who had returned, they knew that Dao Kong could control the fifth kiln, and since they dared to come over and attack him, it was only natural that they had methods to rely upon when dealing with this treasure.

"I'd like to see whether this fifth kiln is truly as mighty as the rumors say. Abyss Activating Brush!" Old You roared with his head raised. Immediately, a dark ray of light flew out from his mouth.

That dark ray of light charged towards the fifth kiln and instantly turned into a white brush surrounded by dark light!

At the same time, a brilliant light shone in Old Ming's eyes. He raised his left hand and struck his chest. Immediately, a loud bang came from his back, and his clothes were torn to reveal shriveled skin. It was full of wrinkles, and a decaying air spread out from it. Right then, numerous runic symbols appeared on his skin.

As a loud bang shot into the air, Old Ming coughed up a mouthful of blood. Immediately, a large patch of skin on his back separated from his body. After floating into the air, it charged towards the fifth kiln.

"Book of Life and Death!" Old Ming roared towards the sky.

The patch of skin that flew out from his back immediately shone with a piercing black light. It was filled with a feeling of death, and there was also a mighty pressure spreading out with loud rumbles from it.

Book of Life and Death and Abyss Activating Brush were two treasures who could be regarded as a set. They were one of the four supreme treasures of True Sacred Yin World, and they were personally created by the Sublime Paragon. Besides the Book of Life and Death as well as the Abyss Activating Brush given to True Sacred Yin World's Kalpa Lord, the remaining three supreme treasures were sunken into Yin River to suppress the nine underworlds.

This sort of supreme treasure surpassed the level of treasure possessed by Xuan Shang in the past. More accurately speaking, they were not even on the same level. They might both be created by the same Sublime Paragon, but one of them was created personally to return a small debt of gratitude, and the other four were created

with meticulousness and painstaking effort. The Sublime Paragon had gathered a large number of materials over the course of many years to create these treasures, and they were used as a legacy of a True World. It was only natural then that they could not be compared.

Almost the instant the Book of Life and Death as well as the Abyss Activation Brush appeared, shock appeared on the faces of a handful of people among the cultivators in the area. Clearly, they had recognized this set of supreme treasures from True Sacred Yin World.

This was the reason behind the confidence of Old You and Ming against Su Ming's fifth kiln. It was all because they had taken the set of supreme treasures from True Sacred Yin World.

To them, the fifth kiln might be mysterious, but that was it. First and foremost, they had never entered the fifth kiln themselves, and second, it was because the Kalpa Lord of True Sacred Yin World had never entered it before due to his status as well.

However, due to the accounts of people from True Sacred Yin World who had survived and returned from it coupled with the investigations and the great history of True Sacred Yin Sacred, they still knew quite a lot about the fifth kiln.

They knew that the greatest divine ability from the fifth kiln was the sea of fire that could burn all those in Mastery Realm. They also knew that if it erupted completely, perhaps flames of even greater level would appear. In fact, they even knew that while the person in possession of the fifth kiln might not be able to harm an Almighty in Life Realm with its sea of fire, but the fifth kiln was practically indestructible, and its owner only needed to control it and send it crashing down to destroy anyone.

It was unknown whether even those in Death Realm could withstand such an attack.

Once they learned of the two greatest functions of the fifth kiln, Old You and Ming were very confident that the moment Dao Kong brought it out, the kiln would belong to True Sacred Yin World.

This... was the greatest reason why they came to Morning Dao Sect to antagonize Dao Kong!

They did not come for Dao Kong himself, and neither did they come to seek vengeance... Instead, they came to snatch the fifth kiln. Since Dao Kong had destroyed True Sacred Yin World's camp in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, even if they snatched the fifth kiln, Morning Dao Sect would not be able to say anything about it as long as they could seize it fast enough.

Almost the instant the Book of Life and Death and the Abyss Activation Brush flew out, the latter looked like it was seized by a huge, invisible hand in the air. When it tilted downwards, it immediately started drawing on the Book of Life and Death.

In just an instant, the outline of the fifth kiln was drawn. The outline looked almost alive, and the moment it was completed, black light shone from the Book of Life and Death. It instantly swelled up, and with a speed so fast it was inconceivable, the black light expanded to a boundless distance and swiftly enveloped the fifth kiln.

A vast suction force spread out from the outline of the fifth kiln drawn by the Abyss Activation Brush on the swelled-up Book of Life and Death. The descended fifth kiln moved slightly towards the Book of Life and Death with a loud bang.

At the same time as the Book of Life and Death swelled up, it completely enveloped the fifth kiln like a seal. Once it wrapped it up tightly, it started absorbing and fusing with it.

Old You and Ming laughed loudly. A glint shone in the eyes of the two puppet, and they rushed towards Su Ming together. During that instant, Old You and Ming formed a seal with their hands as they laughed. When they swung their arms, a vortex instantly appeared around their bodies, and when it swept outwards, that vortex turned into a Relocation Rune.

They wanted to leave. Even if it meant that they were going to disregard all the other people who came with them from True Sacred Yin World, they had to quickly take the sealed fifth kiln and leave Morning Dao Sect.

They had already completed half of their task. At that moment, as the vortices swept outwards and the light from the Relocation Rune reached a blinding degree, Su Ming did not even cast a glance at the origin substitutes of Old You and Ming closing in on him. There was a dull, dead look in his eyes, along with a madness that made him want to kill everything around him. His lips curled upwards in mockery, and it was hard to discern whether he was laughing at himself, at others, or both.

"Another Relocation Rune."

Su Ming's smile was very twisted. At that moment, he had already sunken into an abnormal state. He watched the activation of the Relocation Rune, the fifth kiln being wrapped up by the Book of Life and Death, and Old You and Ming about to disappear with excitement and elation on their faces.

"All of you underestimate the fifth kiln."

Su Ming threw his head back and laughed. There was a shrill and forlorn feeling to his laughter along with madness as well as the resentment which he could not put to words. At the instant it reverberated in the air, Su Ming spoke in a voice as if he was passing judgement.

"All existences who have existed for countless years in the fifth kiln, as the master of the fifth kiln, I will allow you... to walk out!"

At the instant Su Ming's voice echoed in the air, the fifth kiln enveloped by the Book of Life and Death jolted. Among the countless living spirits in the innumerable dimensions within the kiln, there were powerful spirits, even more powerful spirits, and incredibly powerful spirits. Some of them Su Ming had met before, and some of them he had yet to see.

At that instant, no matter what they were doing in the kiln, all of them shuddered and roared at the sky. Their bodies instantly disappeared, and when they reappeared, they were already outside the fifth kiln. It was as if some sort of seal on them had been broken and a new one activated... so that they could be released!

Ferocious beasts, strange figures, Fire Spirits, people with wings, astonishing dragons, and countless ferocious beings with bizarre appearances appeared outside the fifth kiln at that instant. Presences that caused people's expressions to continuously change drastically until they were in complete shock. The countless living beings spread out their presences with loud rumbles, and the presences of those in Mastery Realm, Fate Realm, and Life Realm filled the nine skies.

Five other presences surged into the sky as well. The moment they appeared, they shook the skies, for they were... five people in Death Realm!

The world rumbled. At the instant the existences Su Ming released from the fifth kiln appeared, they rammed themselves against the Book of Life and Death. No matter how powerful this supreme treasure was, it was not the opponent for all the creatures. As booming sounds surged into the sky, the Book of Life and Death crumbled, torn to shreds. The Relocation was instantly interrupted, and the moment fear and disbelief appeared on the faces of Old You and Ming... countless figures pounced on them.

Shrill screams of pain echoed in the air. Booming sounds surged into the sky and reverberated in the area. Su Ming did not even cast a glance at the two puppets rushing to him. While turning his head around, he raised his right hand and pointed at all the people from True Sacred Yin World in the area.

"Kill all the outsiders in this place!"

Countless ferocious spirits roared. Fire Spirits were in the majority of that group. As they charged forward, they surrounded the two puppets by Su Ming and encircled all of the people from True Sacred Yin World. Pained screams resounded over the land, and they seemed to merge into... the most beautiful song at whose end people would die!

Chapter 1110 Father and Son

"Greetings, My Liege!" Two men who were hundreds of feet tall kneeled behind Su Ming. They were large and tall, but the most shocking thing about them was that both of them had three heads.

When they kneeled down with ferocious expressions, each one held a head in their hands. There was no blood dripping from them, for they were... the heads of the origin substitutes of Old You and Ming.

Shrill screams of pain reverberated in the air behind them. Tens of thousands of living beings from the fifth kiln roared at the sky as they approached Su Ming and kneeled down.

"Greetings, My Liege!" The tens of thousands of living beings all held bloody heads in their hands which belonged to the cultivators of True Sacred Yin World.

Further down were countless ferocious beings from the fifth kiln. They also prostrated themselves in the air and let out a uniform shout.

"Greetings, My Liege!"

At the same time, two shrill screams of pain shook the sky and earth. Five powerful presences that were mighty enough to cause all the people's hearts to tremble erupted with a bang in the distance. They belonged to Almighties in Death Realm, and they were filled with the ultimate power of death.

As the presences erupted into the air, five tall figures walked forward slowly from the distance.

One of them was an old Fire Spirit dressed in fire armor. His eyes were calm, and there was an ancient air underneath it. In his hands he held the torn Book of Life and Death as well as the Abyss Activation Brush.

One of the two people by his side was a thin skeleton. If it was not because of the ghastly green flame burning brightly in his eyes, many people might have thought that he was a puppet formed from a corpse.

His limbs were stiff, and when he approached Su Ming, he did not walk over, but instead drifted toward him.

The third was a person with nine heads, but it wasn't what made everyone continuously suck in sharp breaths in shock.

He held a head in his hand. Its eyes were open, and there was disbelief within them.

It was Old You's head!

The fourth was an old woman. She leaned against a cane, and under her silver hair were a pair of silver eyes. Her ancient appearance exuded a deadly still presence akin to death itself.

The last one was a teenager in black. He had an apathetic expression, and his eyes were dull. There were hundreds of wounds on his body, but they were not from the battle just then. They were from some unknown period of time, but they had yet to start healing.

His expression was aloof, and his gaze was icy cold. He felt like a blade that could pierce into everything the master of the fifth kiln wanted, even if the target was the teenager himself.

In his hand he held a head as well. It belonged to Old Ming.

Almighties in Death Realm were practically imperishable existences. However... if five existences even more powerful than those in Death Realm appeared and the fifth kiln suppressed their opponents, then even those in Death Realm... may die. What was more, if the two old men had not brought with them the Book of Life and Death and the Abyss Activation Brush, their levels of cultivation would not have reached Death Realm.

The five living beings with terrifying presences walked by the crowd one step at a time until they passed their companions. When they arrived before Su Ming, they knelt down simultaneously and shouted in a manner that their voices turned into a loud buzz.

"Greetings, My Liege!"

At that moment, it was impossible for Su Ming to not be the center of attention. It was impossible for him to not be an existence akin to a prideful sun, and it was equally impossible for him to not be an existence akin to the brightest star in the universe.

Before him was an endless army of various strange ferocious spirits. It would have been nothing if they were just spirits in World Plane Realm kneeling to Su Ming. Even if they were in Solar Kalpa Realm, it would have still been acceptable. In fact, even if there were in Mastery Realm kneeling to worship Su Ming, the crowd could still somewhat accept it.

However... if those in Fate Realm worshiped him, those in Life Realm submitted to him, and those in Death Realm bowed to him, their actions instantly set off Su Ming's presence to an indescribable level!

All those who came from True Sacred Yin World had died while all those from the Emperor of Abyss' True World had their bodies and souls destroyed. This left a bloody sight that filled the entire area, and in an instant, Dao Kong's name seemed to have been dyed in crimson!

Zi Long shuddered. All those from the Fourth True World around him could no longer remain aloof. When they looked towards Su Ming, their eyes filled with... zealousness!

And beneath it was an unprecedented respect. It was as if the things Su Ming did were an incredibly beautiful, grand feast. They were obsessed with it, and they harbored endless, fervent ardor towards the man who had brought it about.

The ten million cultivators of Morning Dao Sect were silent, staring at the scene in shock. They could no longer think. In fact, with fear in their eyes, the Sect Masters were looking at the densely packed army behind Su Ming whose presence held a mighty pressure. They were also looking at the fifth kiln surrounded by a sea of fire while it floated in the distant sky.

Eventually, all of them looked together towards the five Almighties exuding the terrifying presences behind Su Ming!

The old man in blue had dissipated the ocean trapping Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing. His face was slightly pale, but full of excitement. He rarely felt it due to his age, but not only did he feel it at that moment, he was also filled with great anticipation.

The moment the seal of the ocean dissipated, Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing stared at everything around them blankly with shock on their faces. They might have been temporarily sealed, but they had still been able to see everything.

The scene before them surpassed everything they could have imagined. They had not expected that the strongest attack from the fifth kiln was not its sea of fire, and neither was it its invincible body. Instead... it was the number of enemies which would cause others to fall into despair.

"There are no more outsiders..." Su Ming's voice was hoarse. When he spoke slowly, he cast his gaze at the old man in blue, then at Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing.

Once he finished saying that, he took a step forward. The countless living beings from the fifth kiln behind him roared together. Once they stood up, they moved together with Su Ming.

A monstrous presence erupted violently from the army, causing the expressions on the pale faces of Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing to immediately change.

"Bald crane, open the path through the barrier for me. I want to meet... the great Dao Chen."

Su Ming's voice was hoarse, and it sounded like there was blood contained in it. When he said the final four words, the pain made him feel as if his heart was about to be torn apart.

"Dao Kong, you..." Sect Master Yue had just opened his mouth to speak when a sigh came from a distant sky. With it, a figure walked out from the air.

Needless to say, it was Dao Chen's disciple, Su Ming's elder... Sang!

He did not look old, but the feeling of age was contained in his eyes. Hidden in them were amiability and sorrow. He stared at Su Ming while in possession of the present Su Xuan Yi had wanted to give to Su Ming.

But everything had changed completely because of what had happened just then.

"If you want to come, then come. I will take you there, but have them stay here. Alright?" Sang stared at Su Ming quietly. When he spoke, he had subconsciously spoken in the kindly tone which he'd used when he was in Dark Mountain.

A barely noticeable shudder ran through Su Ming's body. He raised his head and stared at Sang quietly. A long, long time passed, but he did not say a single word. He then simply charged towards Sang.

When Su Ming approached him, Sang sighed softly. He swung his arm, swept up Su Ming, and disappeared from the place.

Su Ming might have left the place used for the Anointment Ceremony in Morning Dao Sect, but the living beings from the fifth kiln stood still with a grim presence spreading out from their bodies. They stared at the area with freezing glares with an air of those who disregarded all rules and laws.

The sky was clear in the area beyond the altar leading to Progenitor Dao Chen's isolation grounds. There was fresh, green grass. In the distance, white clouds and cranes could be seen in the sky. The fragrance of flowers filled the area, and the sound of a small stream could be. It resembled a song of nature, making the place look... incredibly beautiful.

However, when Su Ming appeared, his fourth personality, the black, dead stillness which corresponded with spring, summer, autumn, and winter instantly cast the sky in shadow and gave the fresh, green plants a dismal air.

The black dead stillness from Su Ming and the vast resentment which could destroy the world caused the white clouds in the area to turn black. The chirping of birds and the fragrance of flowers disappeared and the stream was blanketed, causing this place... to look as if it had descended into hell.

Su Ming stood still. His presence changed the world, and when Sang saw this, he fell silent.

The dead, dreary, still look was in Su Ming's eyes. However, there was a madness so strong it could burn blood and everything else existing within him. Without a single word, he walked towards the altar. With each step he took, the world would become darker, and at the instant Su Ming stood on the altar, the world went... completely black.

Once he stepped onto the altar, Su Ming lifted his right leg and stomped on it. With a bang, his body disappeared. When he reappeared, he was back in Su Xuan Yi's isolation grounds, and he saw the figure whose back was turned towards him while seated in a meditating position.

"Why?"

As Su Ming stared at the figure, he felt his heart tear apart once more. His body shuddered, but he did not let out a shocking roar, and neither did he shout in anger. There was only... a murmured question which made him feel as if he was speaking to a stranger.

Su Xuan Yi was silent for a moment. When he spoke, his words were soft and dyed with nostalgia. They echoed in the chamber. "Before your mother and I... were married, we did not know each other.

"But once we were married, she became the only love of my life... When the Fifth True World was destroyed, I was there to see all of my people die. I saw your grandfather and grandmother die, all of my brothers and sisters laugh brokenly in a shrill and forlorn manner. I watched all of our people... self-destruct without care for anything else so that I could leave and protect the Abyss Builders' glory!

"I saw all this, and just kept watching... and watching... until I brought her and you to Divine Essence Star Ocean with the fifth kiln while I suffered in pain.

"Once I came to Divine Essence Star Ocean, madness was within me. I wanted revenge, I wanted to destroy everything, I wanted for Abyss Builders to rise to power again!

"Eventually, I found a way to break your curse, but just when I was about to complete the procedure, Dao Chen brought all of the cultivators of this True World against us...

"During the battle, your mother died, and... I Possessed Dao Chen and became Dao Chen!

"You asked me before where I was when you needed me. I was here! I was here watching you in silence. I was here, because after I Possessed Dao Chen, I fought against the Sublime Paragon of this True World! No one knew about this battle, because it happened in this chamber!" Su Xuan Yi's voice echoed with a strange intensity.

Chapter 1111 Home and Kin

Su Ming remained silent. Echoing in his ears were Su Xuan Yi's words. They lingered for a long time, refusing to disappear.

He had already guessed that the process of Su Xuan Yi Possessing Dao Chen had not gone smoothly, but he did not expect that once he did so, he had to fight against True Morning Dao World's Sublime Paragon in this chamber.

It was also this battle that prevented Su Xuan Yi from being able to move his body. He could only continue healing his wounds in this place.

"I did not lose that battle... but neither did True Morning Dao Sect's Sublime Paragon lose. With the Abyss Builders' inborn ability, I cast the irreversible Art of my real self fusing into this clone, and for the price of this body suffering incredibly grave injuries, I destroyed the Sublime Paragon's body, but his soul... I had no other methods, so I could only watch as he fled from this place.

"The only thing I could do was to have my clone in the fifth kiln search for your mother and bring her corpse back to the fifth kiln so that I could use other people's life force to nourish her body, waiting for the day when my injuries recovered completely so that I could resurrect her.

"That clone of mine is still in the fifth kiln... but he can't leave," the figure with his back towards Su Ming said in anguish. His voice reverberated in the chamber, causing Su Ming to be unable to say anything once he heard it. He could only remain silent.

"When my clone found your mother, she was in a damaged dimension in Yin Death Region. She was on an ancient sword from True Sacred Yin World. You were there as well... as a dead baby.

"I did not take you with me, because at that time, the curse had already corroded everything about you, and because at that time, I realized that in the strange Yin Death Region... you seemed to have a hint of life force gradually growing in you even though you were dead." When Su Xuan Yi said these words, he sighed lightly.

"Even if I didn't say all that, you should have been able to guess that I am your father. I... won't harm you. Everything that I did was for—"

"It wasn't for me," Su Ming said in a low voice as he raised his head. "Su Xuan Yi, my father, everything that you did wasn't for me, and there was no need for you to do it for me."

Su Ming shook his head. He was not the young boy who had just ventured out of Dark Mountain. He was the God of Berserkers, he was Su Ming who had risen to power in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, and he was also Dao Kong who had shocked the entire Morning Dao Sect. He had already grown up and become an adult. There were some things that might seem as they appeared, but when someone thought about them carefully, it would become clear that there was another side to them.

"Yin Death Region wasn't destroyed even after the first God of Berserkers challenged Dao Chen. Because of that, I've always speculated that the first God of Berserkers was one of your chess pieces. A chess piece you stationed in Yin Death Region!

"The purpose of that chess piece was to fight against the Immortals and to understand Yin Death Region at the same time.

"The second God of Berserkers was also your chess piece. In fact, I'm quite certain that the Gods of Berserkers had appeared because you were controlling their birth from afar.

"In the scenes I saw, the second God of Berserkers took me away when I was a baby from the World of Nine Yin, but in the end, the Immortals invaded Yin Death Region and took my infant self as well as the second God of Berserkers' daughter.

"When I was brought to the land of Immortals, I became a spirit stone that was refined by the Immortals until my soul was forcefully separated from my physical body. It was then sealed while my soul was sent into Yin Death Region.

"You knew all of this, or rather, this was all part of your plan. The thirty odd times I was reincarnated in Dark Mountain, the companions by my side, and even the elder... were all your chess pieces.

"Di Tian lay in wait and watched me. He was always searching for something on me. I never understood it why his level of cultivation would have such a big difference between the past and the present. He always seemed to become stronger with each time I saw him, but now, when I think about it... I understand it." Su Ming stared at Su Xuan Yi, and a hint of pain appeared in his eyes.

"He was the soul of True Morning Dao Sect's Sublime Paragon who fled after he lost his physical body. This soul eventually chose to Possess the disciple of the Immortals' Yellow Emperor, who was the Di Tian of that time!" Su Ming smiled. That smile was filled with anguish, and was the one he used when speaking to strangers.

"Di Tian wanted to gain something from me, and he was even scheming against my physical body. I believe... that he was trying to figure out Abyss Builders' weakness, since with just his soul, he was gravely wounded. If he wanted to kill you, he had to find Abyss Builders' weakness.

"That's why he made my soul reincarnate while preserving my physical body. In fact, I believe that he thought about Possessing me before. Am I right, my dear father?" Su Ming asked in anguish while staring at Su Xuan Yi.

The man remained silent.

"In the end, he did all of this because his target was you. I might not know what Di Tian's final plan is, but I can guess that you know all about it. Perhaps the reasons you spoke of existed before you took me away when I was a dead infant, but the real important thing was that... you noticed that the Sublime Paragon had possessed Di Tian. You noticed his attention on me, which is why you chose to treat me as a chess piece. My function was to blind Di Tian so that he would walk down the wrong path... and not be a threat to you.

"I also had another function. You used those ancient existences in Yin Death Region to make me head to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence based on your method. You sent Dao Kong for me to Possess him. For this plan to be completed, I believe that you've always been observing me. If I ran into any life-threatening dangers on the way, you would have taken action. In fact... there is a possibility that you have already taken action before.

"Every single time you took action, you would do so with the thought that you are my father in mind, but all you ever wanted was for me to remain alive. You only needed me to do things according to your plan.

"Ever since I was born, you had already planned out my entire life. When I acted out, you made another arrangement for my life. In your eyes, is there anyone else besides your chess pieces?" Su Ming laughed brokenly. He stared at Su Xuan Yi, who still had his back turned towards him. He did not shout, though. His voice was calm.

"When I came to know that Bai Ling, a person who is in a sect affiliated with Morning Dao Sect, had appeared in Dark Mountain, I stared at the moon in the sky and drank. There were complicated emotions in my heart because of her and you, because I knew that you took part in everything that happened in Dark Mountain.

"Are you not affected when you see your own son in pain?" Su Ming sighed softly.

"You schemed against the Sublime Paragon, Yin Death Region, and even against the 180 Expanse Cosmoes in Saint Defier standing behind the Immortals' Union. You planned all of it. You brought Xiao Hong into my world and even Old Man Extermination's fragmented Seed of Life Extermination. You made me fuse with the fragment so that I could become the current Extermination.

"You made me go to Divine Essence Star Ocean and destroy... Divine Essence Star Ocean's fifth ocean, the spot that was clearly a Relocation spot for the 180 Expanses Cosmoes of Dark Dawn.

"I don't know why you did it, but I can guess that you wanted Saint Defier and Dark Dawn to wage a huge war of an unprecedented scale either inside or out of Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos.

"You're doing this for revenge. You're doing this to make the Abyss Builders raise to power once more. But can you... say that you're doing this for me?" Su Ming smiled. There was deep anguish contained in that smile, as if he was laughing at someone, but he was not laughing at Su Xuan Yi. He was laughing at himself.

After a long time had passed, Su Xuan Yi spoke softly. "Walking from death to life is the only path for you to break the curse." .

"Were you the one who gave me this path?" Su Ming stared at Su Xuan Yi's back, his words gradually turning cold.

"You're still too young. You don't understand..." After some time, Su Xuan Yi sighed softly. His voice was laced with anguish as well. "When the day comes when you understand that there is no home without kin, you will understand me. You will truly come to understand me."

Su Ming remained silent for a moment before he retorted. "But if there is no home, how will we even have kin?"

"If you insist upon hating me, you can do so. Everything that I did was indeed not for you. I did it for all the Abyss Builders," Su Xuan Yi murmured with a tremble.

"Why should I even hate you?" Su Ming shook his head. "Do I hate you for not being by my side when I needed you and when I saw that the others had their parents but I didn't? My resentment is deep, but I am no longer the child I once was. This is just a temporary change in my emotions, but in truth... what do I have to hate about you?"

"Should I hate you for manipulating my life? My life was given by you, what do I have to hate about you?"

"Should I hate you for not being my side? I'm already used to loneliness and feeling lost. What else can I hate about you?"

"Should I hate you... for sacrificing your wife to make the Abyss Builders raise to power once more?" When Su Ming said these words, tears trailed down his cheeks, reflecting his grief and sorrow.

At the instant he said those words, Su Xuan Yi jolted.

"I'm no longer a child. All this while I was alone, and because of it, I learned a long time ago how to analyze certain things through the tiniest hints. It's just that I didn't want to think too deeply into it. I didn't want to."

"Do you know why I wanted to take the fifth kiln with me? Why I didn't leave it behind for you? It's not because you wanted it to belong to me, but because I knew you didn't want to face it. You didn't want to see the fifth kiln.

"My mother... even when she died, she still held onto the baby in her arms. There might seem to be nothing strange about this... but when she held me, she floated in the galaxy all alone. She was protecting me. It's an instinctive sort of action, but who exactly had she been fending against?"

Su Xuan Yi breathed heavily, and he trembled even more violently. Clearly, his heart was in an extreme state of turmoil at that moment. The space around him shattered in some places.

"She was fending against you. Even upon death, she still tried to bring me away from your side. My dear father, do you truly think that I wouldn't learn about this?"

"That was an accident!" For the first time ever, Su Xuan Yi growled at Su Ming. That growl reverberated in the air, and Su Ming was forced to move backwards. He coughed up a mouthful of blood.

"An accident? Then let's treat it as an accident. What do I have to hate about you? She is your wife. You placed her in the fifth kiln so that you could resurrect her.

"That's why I don't hate you. I can only resent you, because she is your wife, and you are my father. What do I have to hate about you? I can only take the fifth kiln away with me and not let you anywhere close to it..." Su Ming said while wiping off the blood at the corners of his mouth.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1112 Yu Xuan, Fei Er - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1112 Yu Xuan, Fei Er Chapter 1112 Yu Xuan, Fei Er

"But it should have been enough for you to use me and my mother as your chess pieces. We were your family, so you had the right to do it. If I hated you for it, then I would be an unfilial son. Thus, I could only resent you!

"However... why did you treat all my friends and all the people I know as your chess pieces as well?!" When Su Ming raised his head, revealing his bloodshot eyes.

"They were completely unrelated to you! Yu Xuan doesn't suit me? It's not that she doesn't suit me, but that you gave her a mission which requires her to stay in the Emperor of Abyss' True World. You've treated her as a chess piece from the moment she was born!

"Yu Xuan and Fei Er are one!" Su Ming clenched his fists tightly. More red appeared in his eyes, and he even felt as if he could sense the tear drop that had landed on his face when he was outside the altar.

"My little sister, who was by my side all the time when everything around me was dark... The second God of Berserkers' daughter... I should have guessed it a long time ago. I should have made the connections, but only when you stopped me from extending my hand... that I understood it." Su Ming shook his head. He had only come to ask Su Xuan Yi why he did it.

Yet he was aware that he'd known the answer to that question since the beginning.

"I've already helped you do many things... Let me go. Let go my mother as well as my friends. From now onwards, you can walk down your path to raise the Abyss Builders to power once more, to continue with your path of only having a home if you have kin.

"It is indeed so. Without kin, there will be no home. With your kin around, you can rebuild your home... but at that time, your family will no longer have me or my mother.

"And I will proceed with my thoughts that there are no kin if there is no home. It's precisely because of home that I will have my family, and only then will I protect it. For my family's safety, I will make a race raise to power. The ones who support me in everything that I do are my family!"

Blood trickled down the corners of Su Ming's mouth, since Su Xuan Yi's growl just then had injured his body. While speaking, Su Ming wiped off the blood from the corners of his mouth. He took a few steps back and stared at Su Xuan Yi.

"To the entire Abyss Builders... you are a senior worthy of respect, you are the soul of the race worthy of reverence." As he spoke, Su Ming wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed deeply towards him.

"But as a father and a husband, you..." Su Ming raised his head, and the expression in his eyes was that of someone looking at a stranger. He did not finish his words, but instead, turned around and took a step into the air.

"Don't use me anymore. Don't plot against my mother and my friends anymore. This is the last time. For everything before, I will only stop calling you my father. If there is a next time... then we will be enemies!

"From now on, you will be the hero that will make the Abyss Builders raise to power, and I... will be a nobody who only wants to protect his family and companions. It'd be for the best if we didn't come into contact again." Su Ming stepped into the air and gradually disappeared.

When he appeared, he was standing on the altar. Before him was Sang. With a complicated gaze, he stared at Su Ming. He opened his mouth, as if he wanted to say something, but in the end, he only sighed softly. When he raised his right hand, a wooden sword appeared on his palm.

"This is what your father asked me to give you. He once said that if you can control this sword, you can bring glory to your race. If you can't control it, then you will live a life of peace."

Su Ming did not look at the wooden sword. Instead, he stared at the cultivator named Sang. As he stared at him, the red in his eyes gradually turned into a look of fond remembrance.

After a long while, Su Ming went forward and gently hugged Sang.

"Elder, I missed you so much..."

Sang shuddered, then gently patted Su Ming's back. He appeared young, but at that moment, a kindly and sentimental look which reminded of an old man's appeared in his eyes.

"This sword..." Sang hesitated for a moment before a hint of resolution appeared in his eyes. When he raised his right hand, the sword disappeared from it.

"You will not want this sword. My young La Su has grown up. You can challenge the universe on your own. Go on, with your own thoughts and ideals, walk down the path that belongs to you!"

Sang stared at Su Ming, and the same fond remembrance showed up on his kind face. He had watched the child grow up with his own eyes and had taken care of him with his own hands. His feelings for Su Ming came from the memories which were deeply ingrained in his mind.

He had long treated Su Ming as his own child.

Su Ming stared at Sang for a long, long time before he took a few steps back to kowtow to him. He was bowing down to his elder, the one who had raised him till he became an adult, who taught him everything, and who had given him warmth in his childhood years.

Then Su Ming left. Sang stared at his back leaving into the distance before he slowly turned around to step into the altar. He then came to Su Xuan Yi's isolation grounds.

As he stared at Su Xuan Yi, Sang was silent for a moment before he placed the wooden sword to the side.

"Your will is contained in this sword. I might not be an Abyss Builder, but I can tell that besides offering protection, this will can also... change a person's personality and the path of their destiny.

"He has already grown up, Master... Let him be free." Sang sighed softly and bowed quietly towards Su Xuan Yi's back.

"Home and kin..." After a long while, Su Xuan Yi spoke softly. It was as if he did not hear Sang's words behind him. He stared at the rattling drum and fork in front of him, and as he continued staring at it, a woman's face seemed to appear vaguely before his eyes.

Time trickled by. In a while, a sigh came from Su Xuan Yi's mouth... He slowly turned around... then gradually stood up!

He appeared to be a middle-aged man with an awe-inspiring countenance. His tall and strong body made it look like he could support the whole world by himself. Sang was not at all surprised by his actions. He still remained in his previous posture—his head lowered and his body bent to form a bow.

When Su Ming walked out of Su Xuan Yi's isolation grounds and returned to the place used for the Anointment Ceremony, the people from the Fourth True World had already left. The only ones remaining in the place were the cultivators of Morning Dao Sect, along with all the living beings of the fifth kiln who still stood around in a respectful manner.

Once they saw Su Ming, they immediately bowed towards him simultaneously.

At the same time, the ten million cultivators of Morning Dao Sect cast sideways glances at him with various thoughts contained in their expressions. It was especially so for the Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing.

They saw Su Ming walk out of the air and move towards the horde of living spirits from the fifth kiln before he swung his arm. The living spirits with a grim presence to them then turned into long arcs and disappeared back into the fifth kiln. After that, the fifth kiln gradually shrank before it fused into the center of Su Ming's brows.

Silence covered the area. Su Ming stared at the Vermilion Bird's continent, and determination showed up in his eyes.

"Dao Kong, Dao Hua, Dao Lin. The three of you are the Dynasts of Morning Dao Sect. All of you have noble statuses and have the right to set up your own chambers as well as take in your own subordinates. However, as a Dynast, if you want to take over Dao Chen's position, you will need war achievements!" The silence was broken by Sect Master Xing, who spoke in a low voice.

His voice spread out through the entire area. He disregarded everything that happened previously and spoke of the last stage of the Anointment Ceremony languidly.

"You have to go to war. The three of you are the bright and promising Dynasts of Morning Dao Sect, but in truth, there are three Hidden Dynasts behind your backs. The Hidden Dynasts also have the right to inherit Morning Dao Sect in the future, so you will have to go to war!

"You will need war achievements. The first person who can kill ten million members of the Immortals' Union will have the right to become the future master of True Morning Dao World!

"The war achievements ranking board will be set up once more. You might be Dynasts, but if you die in battle, then the person whose rank is the highest in the war achievements ranking board will be free to inherit your title and become a quasi-Dynast. If all of you die in battle, then three quasi-Dynasts will be born, and in time will be anointed as real Dynasts.

"Go to war. Morning Dao Sect will now... wage a full-scale war against the Immortals' Union!" Sect Master Xing's eyes shone. As his voice reverberated in the air, it landed in all the cultivators' ears, exciting them.

Over the course of many years during which Morning Dao Sect had fought against the Immortals' Union, the war was controlled and limited to a certain area, which meant Morning Dao Sect had not used its full power. But now, it was clear that the Council of Sect Masters had long since decided that when the Dynasts appeared, they would wage a full-scale war against the Immortals' Union.

During that moment, as Sect Master Xing's voice reverberated in the air, all the disciples from Morning Dao Sect in the area instantly threw their heads back and roared towards the sky.

"To war!"

"To war!"

"TO WAR!!!"

"This time, we will no longer fight in such a slow manner against the Immortals' Union as we did in the past. This time, we will wage a full-scale war, and we will... completely dissolve the Immortals' Union in one go!" Sect Master Xing's voice filled with even greater excitement. When it echoed in the air, Sect Master Yue swept his gaze across the crowd.

"This time, Morning Dao Sect will separate into ten armies made up of cultivators, and each one will contain thirty million disciples. We will slaughter our way into the

Immortals' Union from different directions. Dao Kong, Dao Hua, Dao Lin, the three of you will act as overseers and will each belong to one of these armies.

"You will not participate in the overall arrangement of the armies, but will be given tasks according to what is written here, and each of them will be different!" As he spoke, Sect Master Yue raised his right hand, and three jade slips immediately charged towards Su Ming and the other two.

Su Ming had a cold expression on his face. In his eyes was a dark, dull, and still look. When the jade slip approached him, he did not raise his hand to take it. He only cast a glance at it before the jade slip shattered in front of him with a bang.

Before it was destroyed though, Su Ming had already seen everything on it.

Once he returned from Su Xuan Yi's isolation grounds, Su Ming had decided to leave Morning Dao Sect. But once he heard of the declaration of war and saw his task on the jade slip, a barely noticeable glint shone in his eyes. He temporarily gave up on the idea of leaving.

He originally intended to search for his three senior brothers in Yin Death Region, then head to the Immortals' Union to snatch his real physical body back, but with his current level of cultivation, it was still hard for him to do all of this. And if he wanted to go to the Emperor of Abyss' True World to look for Yu Xuan, he would have to be even stronger.

With a glint in his eyes, Su Ming turned around in silence. With a single move, he dashed into the distance. The bald crane and the Abyss Dragon immediately followed behind him. Zhu You Cai walked over silently, and Flame Fiends' Progenitor too mustered his full speed to turn into a long arc.

Besides these people, Su Ming did not bring with him anyone else. Without a single word, he charged towards where he was supposed to go based on the information provided on the jade slip.

After he left, Dao Lin and Dao Hua also seized their respective jade slips and scanned them with their divine senses. They frowned, their expressions turning rather sour, but they could not refuse whatever task was given to them. Once they bowed to Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing, they turned into long arcs to gather their followers, attendants, and a rather large number of their family members to swiftly leave in two different directions.

Chapter 1113 War Chamber

"Di Tian still has another secret..."

In the northwestern part of True Morning Dao World was a brilliant, dazzling galaxy. There was a crimson planet there, but even though it looked like it was covered in flames, in reality it was icy cold and filled with a freezing chill that allowed no one to get near it.

Su Ming sat in the space nearby and stared at the strange planet with a freezing glare. A barely noticeable glare shone in his eyes as he mumbled to himself.

"Sublime Paragon's soul Possessed Di Tian's physical body, but there was absolutely no need for him to organize the Immortals' Union to fight against Morning Dao Sect. His relationship with Su Xuan Yi... doesn't seem to be what I imagined." Su Ming's eyes shone with a dark light as he fell into deep thought.

"Oh well, as long as he doesn't try to set me up again, this has nothing to do with me. What I need to do now is to seize my real physical body back, find my senior brothers... and then go to the Emperor of Abyss' True World!" A still and aloof expression appeared on Su Ming's face. He remembered the task given to him by Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing on the jade slip.

"Kill Bai Feng, the Sacred Lady of Phoenix Sect!" Besides telling Su Ming to come to this place and wait for the gathering of troops, the jade slip had only had that one sentence.

Su Ming remained silent for a time before he slowly closed his eyes. His presence completely disappeared, making it look as if he had died.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor surveyed his surroundings, and Zhu You Cai quietly sat down cross-legged with his eyes closed. The Abyss Dragon and the bald crane whispered to each other, though no one knew what they were discussing. However, based on how their eyes sparkled, it was clear that they were very excited.

Days passed. When Su Ming left Morning Dao Sect for about half a month, a piercing light suddenly burst forth from the crimson planet in front of him.

At the instant the light shone, Su Ming opened his eyes. When he looked in its direction, he heard the planet let out a loud bang before exploding out of nowhere.

When a violent impact swept outwards, it turned into a roaring violent gust of wind. The instant Su Ming saw the planet shatter and heard the booming sounds reverberate in space, he found that the power generated when the planet collapsed did not spread outwards, but instead turned into a huge black hole.

Booming sounds continued without end. At the instant the vortex appeared, groups of cultivators dressed in armor walked out from the black hole with aloof gazes.

Each cultivator had murderous aura spreading out from their body. There was a brilliant glare in their eyes, making it clear that they were not ordinary cultivators. Su Ming could sense a great, bloody aura around their bodies. Almost every single cultivator in the area was a cold-blooded War Immortal who had already killed countless living beings.

They had clearly used the power from the collapse of a planet to activate a Relocation Rune that expanded to an unknown territory and instantly Relocated all the cultivators in Morning Dao Sect who should gather to the designated place.

In the blink of an eye, more than a million cultivators walked out of the black hole. They stood close to each other, and the grim air spreading out of them seemed to be able to freeze the galaxy. Once they walked out, they formed square arrays made up of one million people each and stood tall in front of Su Ming.

In time, more cultivators walked out, and warships exuding waves of mighty pressure came after them. This entire process lasted for most of the day before it gradually came to an end.

When the tremors calmed down, there were already more than five million cultivators in front of Su Ming. There was no end to the sea formed from this many people.

Above them were more than one hundred thousand warships. They drifted in space slowly. Behind them were nearly ten thousand huge stone platforms which were one hundred thousand feet wide. Further into the distance were thousands of gigantic beasts who were howling at the heavens. There was a chain on each one, and they were all tied to... a planet even further behind them!

A whole planet had come from within the black hole. It shone with a seven-colored light, and waves of terrifying, mighty pressure spread out from it.

"Dynast Dao Kong!" A velvety voice with a lackadaisical tone spread out from the planet shining with the seven-colored light. Immediately, the five million cultivators in the area let out a low growl simultaneously.

The roar shook the sky and earth and caused the galaxy to tremble. A large number of cracks tore through space, and they formed an indescribable, awe-inspiring air that seemed to want to suppress Su Ming.

"The five million cultivators from the Earthen Pole of the two Heaven and Earthen Poles in War Chamber welcome Dynast Dao Kong to come forth and supervise the war." Once the velvety voice spoke once more, the five million cultivators in the area let out another howl.

This time, it was even stronger. When it traveled outwards, the five million cultivators let out their cultivation bases. A heinous, murderous aura erupted from all of them at the same time.

The murderous aura was so thick that it seemed like it was about to gain corporeal form. It turned into countless vengeful souls which could only be detected by divine sense. Once they appeared in the galaxy, they roared at Su Ming.

If it was anyone else in his place and even if their levels of cultivation were higher, their hearts would tremble in the face of the murderous aura formed by the five million cultivators from the War Chamber, and they would be so intimidated that they would be forced back. In fact, their hearts and souls would even be injured.

It was the case for Flame Fiends' Progenitor who stood behind Su Ming and whose expression had change. His face had instantly went pale. The Abyss Dragon shuddered, stunned. As for Zhu You Cai, his pupils shrank, but his expression remained the same.

The bald crane yawned. Putting on a face as if it regarded all of this in disdain, it mumbled a few words under its breath.

As for Su Ming, there was not a single hint of change on his face. In fact, even his pupils did not shrink. With just one glance, he could tell that the War Chamber's intentional intimidation was clearly a warning. They wanted him to know that even though he was a Dynast and had come to supervise the war, he was not to be too presumptuous.

They also showed their fangs so that Su Ming would know... that they were not to be easily provoked!

In fact, Su Ming could even tell that it did not matter whether it was the army of cultivators in front of him, the warships floating in space, or even the more powerful cultivators sitting on the floating stone platforms, most of these people had a scornful, aloof look hidden in their eyes as they stared at him while releasing their cultivation bases and murderous aura.

They clearly looked down on him. They only acknowledged real strength, and even if most of them had heard of the things which happened during the Anointment Ceremony in Morning Dao Sect, there were certain things that people would not believe unless they saw it with their own eyes. This was more common among people who were stronger. The stronger they were, the more they would act like this.

There were plenty of people among the five million cultivators who believed that there were falsehoods in the story about what had happened during the Anointment Ceremony.

"Pardon us. I hope that you will not mind, Your Highness. All of my cultivators only acknowledge powerful warriors. If they showed any form of disrespect to you, I hope that you will not hate them on behalf of how they had killed countless cultivators from the Immortals' Union over the past one thousand something years.

"In truth, I really do not want to tell you this, but even if you hate them, it is useless," the lackadaisical, velvety voice said as usual, and most of the five million cultivators in the area laughed loudly.

"Alright, let us welcome our Dynast Dao Kong, the Dynast who will supervise us Earthen Pole while we fight."

Once the last words were spoken, the laughter came to an abrupt halt. An intense, grim presence spread through the air. The cultivators in front of Su Ming instantly moved, and the formation of ten thousand people moved as if it was one body. Booming sounds shook the heavens as the cultivators changed their battle formation in front of Su Ming. They made a path for him through the crowd that would allow him to walk towards the planet in the distance.

However, the invisible, murderous aura coming from all the cultivators was gathered on both sides of the path.

Su Ming cast the group of cultivators a cold glance. He took a step forward, and the instant it landed, the power of those in Mastery Realm erupted from his body, causing the galaxy to shudder. The mighty pressure formed by the five million cultivators in front of him immediately shuddered.

As Su Ming moved closer, the power of his cultivation base grew stronger. With just the power of one person, he fought against the mighty pressure formed by the five million cultivators. When each step he took, a loud bang rose into space, which came from the many cultivators around him stepping back simultaneously!

At that instant, the eyes of the cultivators on the warships above, on the stone platforms, and the backs of the huge beasts shone brilliantly. With surprise, all of them stared at Su Ming.

"How impressive, Your Highness. All of you bastards in War Chamber, let Dynast Dao Kong see your bloodlust!"

When the velvety voice came from the planet once more, the five million cultivators immediately roared at the same time. Their murderous aura was released without any restraint, and it was much stronger than before. This murderous aura could make laws fall back, the heavens close their eyes, and fill the entire area with chill as cold as midwinter!

It was so strong that it immediately caused the expression of Flame Fiends' Progenitor to change. In fact, a solemn expression appeared even on Zhu You Cai's face.

He had heard about Morning Dao Sect's War Chamber before. It was a solid blade formed by a group of maniacs, and they were Morning Dao Sect's strongest force against those beyond the True World.

They were stationed at the borders all year long. When there were enemies, they would train while they fought, and when there were no enemies, they would practice their cultivation while fighting against each other. In their fights, they would care not whether the other party would come out alive or dead.

They were Morning Dao Sect's War Chamber, the ones whose name shook all four Great True Worlds!

The War Chamber was divided into the Heaven and Earthen Poles. Each had five million cultivators, and the ones leading them were two cultivators so strong they were terrifying, and only those who were worthy in the four Great True Worlds knew their names—Poison Fang and Wild Dog.

Poison Fang led the Heaven Pole, and just like the nickname given to him by others, he was incredibly vicious!

Wild Dog led the Earthen Pole, and he was extremely despicable. Wherever he went, no grass would grow from the heinous slaughter he'd committed.

Su Ming cast a cold glare at the murderous aura spreading out from the five million cultivators, and dark light shone in his eyes. During that instant, an astonishing murderous aura erupted from his own body. It had grown little by little with each living being he killed in his life, and it was so strong that it caused the universe to rumble. The expressions of the five million cultivators changed drastically the moment they sensed it!

They could sense that it was impossible to count how many beings had died by Su Ming's hand. Forget the destruction of True Sacred Yin World's camp and the slaughter of tens of thousands of cultivators from the Immortals' Union, just the slaughter of the swarm of Waves of Tears in Divine Essence Star Ocean would have been enough to shock everyone.

Chapter 1114 My Name is Wild Dog

Su Ming's murderous aura might not have been able to compare with the murderous aura formed together by the five million cultivators from War Chamber, but at the instant it spread out, it still managed to suppress the flames from the War Chamber's Earthen Pole!

Su Ming had both a powerful cultivation base and a heinous murderous aura. During that instant, the dead stillness in his eyes caused his body to exude a malicious presence. It made seem like he no longer possessed any spirit, which meant there was only darkness within him.

He walked slowly through the path made by the five million cultivators towards the planet in the distance.

Wherever he went, the hearts of the cultivators from the War Chamber around him would tremble. The people had stepped back together, and when they stared at Su Ming, their eyes were filled with shock. They were cultivators who had gone through hundreds of wars, and their hands were stained with large quantities of blood. They had slaughtered mercilessly, and because of that, they could sense even more clearly the murderous aura and killing intent exuded by Su Ming.

His murderous aura was so thick that it surpassed the ones possessed by many of them. In fact, they had a feeling that the one walking towards them was not a cultivator, but a primitive beast from ancient times. It seemed to have walked out of a sea of blood, and with each step, its foot would stomp on the hearts of the five million people. Their hearts beat loudly, and they felt oppressed, which was something they felt rarely.

But that was not all. Besides the murderous aura and his cultivation base, there was also an indescribable malice about Su Ming. It seemed to contain the source of all ghastliness in the universe. The viciousness of it made it seem like it could twist a person's personality so that someone yearning for brightness and hope would give up on all of their desires and become a person who disregarded all laws.

To the cultivators who boasted of their own integrity, this was the greatest source of evil in the universe. It was something they could not accept and something they desired greatly to destroy. However, the five million cultivators in the War Chamber's Earthen Pole filled with a fervent ardor, and slowly, thoughts of respect formed. The presence had shaken them, and a desire to get closer to it grew in them.

The War Chamber's Earthen Pole prioritized slaughter, and each of one of its cultivators respected powerful warriors who slaughtered in an even more maniacal fashion than them, which was why... the instant they sensed Su Ming's murderous aura and his cultivation base, they had instinctively moved back. During that instant, the shock in their eyes slowly turned into respect.

Just like that, without a single word, Su Ming moved forward slowly. He walked through the path formed by the five million cultivators. Before him, the cultivators moved back, and behind him, the cultivators lowered their heads to worship him.

This was a form of respect towards powerful warriors who'd slaughtered even more beings than them and who exuded an extremely malicious presence. Others might not understand this form of respect, but this was the first form of acknowledgement from the War Chamber!

When Su Ming reached the end of the long path revealed by the five million cultivators, everyone behind him bowed to him. Su Ming walked past the warships above him and past the numerous platforms. He went past the countless huge beasts, and eventually...

he stepped onto the planet which was filled with the seven-colored light. There, he saw a towering platform!

The platform was pentagonal in shape, and it was extremely huge. In fact, when he cast his gaze over it, he saw that there were countless platforms like it. They surrounded the largest one at the center while covering the whole planet.

On the largest platform were four people.

One of them stood at the front, two at the back, and one in the center!

The one in front was dressed in a full-body armor. His face could not be seen, but his white hair danced in the air. He stood silent with a shocking murderous aura coming from his body. Countless vengeful spirits existed within it, and their existences shook the sky and earth.

However, his murderous aura was still unable to compare to that of Su Ming.

The two people behind were also dressed in armor. In their hands they held great swords whose tips pierced through the ground. They stood silently, but their heads were lifted, and the eyes under their masks were filled with callousness and mercilessness. It was an indifference to all the living, an arrogant conceitedness that could allow a person to destroy a planet without batting an eye.

Surrounded by these three people was a middle-aged man who was sitting cross-legged on the platform. There was an ancient table before him that held a pot of wine. He was drinking it by himself.

The man was as fair as a piece of jade, and he looked incredibly handsome. However... there was a long scar on his face. It was a hideous shade of flesh-like red, taking away handsomeness of the man's features and replaced them with a strangely enchanting, ferocious appearance.

His eyebrows were long, but if anyone looked closely, they would find that they were drawn. His face was pale, but similarly, if anyone looked closely, they would find that it was applied with makeup as well.

His eyes were long and narrow, just like the eyes of a phoenix. Once he drank a mouthful of wine, he stared at Su Ming walking towards him from the sky.

"For once, a rumor in Morning Dao Sect is real. I didn't expect that such a Star of Disaster would appear this time."

The man smiled. His voice was as velvety as before. He raised his right hand and swung it at the table. Immediately, a second wine cup appeared, right across from his own cup.

"With such a murderous aura, you deserve the War Chamber's acknowledgement. Let me treat you to a drink." The man chuckled softly while pointing forward.

Su Ming stared coldly at the man who smelled of makeup, then suddenly narrowed his eyes. There was not a hint of any sort of murderous aura about the man, but Su Ming could clearly sense a presence of a wild dog that stood above the souls of countless corpses while it devoured their flesh and blood and tore through their souls.

Wild dogs were weak creatures that existed in many planets. They were so weak that mortals who were slightly stronger could kill them.

However, wild dogs also possessed great offensive abilities. They were mortal creatures filled with a ruthless and brutal air. In Dao Kong's memories, no one knew the name of the leader of the War Chamber's Earthen Pole. He only had a nickname... Wild Dog.

Su Ming did not speak. He walked until he reached the table, then with a swing of his arm, he sat down cross-legged.

Immediately, the head of a crane which had a sleazy expression popped up from behind him. It twitched its nose, then its eyes instantly brightened up. It walked out and seized the pot of wine with its claw, then started taking large swigs from it.

"A Fiend Wine brewed by vengeful souls. Darn it all, this is good stuff. It can nourish this Grandpa Crane's soul~"

The bald crane finished drinking the pot and swayed to turn into an old man with an Immortal air beside Su Ming. With a dry cough, it looked as if it wanted to say something, but it suddenly felt that its appearance did not seem to fit with the ghastly atmosphere. Even though there was a seven-colored light spreading out from the entire planet, it did nothing but gave the area an even more bizarre air.

The ghastliness and the murderous aura as well as the vengeful souls from beyond the planet gave a thought to the bald crane. It moved again, and this time, it turned into a ferocious-looking bald man.

The middle-aged man, who was the leader of the War Chamber's Earthen Pole, stared at the bald crane with a look of great interest. A smile appeared on his face. However, it caused the scar on his face to twitch, which made his smile look incredibly ghastly.

He clapped his hands, and immediately, shadows manifested in the air beside him. When they closed in, they placed eight pots of wine on the table.

The bald crane's eyes brightened. It licked its lips, then grabbed one of the pots and started drinking in big gulps.

Su Ming's expression remained the same as ever. Not a single change could be detected. The middle-aged man cast a glance at the bald crane, then back at Su Ming.

"My name is Wild Dog," the man said with a smile and picked up his cup. "I don't know what your mission is. The only order I obtained is to have the War Chamber's Earthen Pole enter the Immortals' Union from the third warzone.

"On the way, we will run into more than thirty races from the Immortals' Union. We might meet some bizarre and strange existences, but no matter what we run into it, the War Chamber will bring you to the end of the third warzone, where the galaxy serving as the core of the territory belonging to the Immortals' Union lies.

"This is the order given to me. No matter what mission you were given, I wish you success." When the man spoke, he finished the wine in his cup.

He then swung his right hand, and an illusory picture appeared in the air beside him. It showed a map, and it contained all the regions of True Morning Dao Sect.

"This is the core of the Immortals' Union." As he spoke, the man pointed forward with his right hand, and immediately, a spot appeared on the map. Su Ming stared at it without saying a single word.

"This was also where the Immortals' forces of power were in the past. You can say that this is where their main camp was. Right now, besides the Immortals, Phoenix Sect has also moved there."

Su Ming remained as calm as ever. As he stared at the spot, the third eye suddenly appeared at the center of his brows. The map was instantly magnified endlessly before his eyes, and in a moment, he saw Yin Death Region lying in the region which had belonged solely to the Immortals, and in the deepest parts of the area was a darkness. Su Ming was familiar with that place; it was where his real physical body was suppressed.

When the man saw the third eye appear at the center of Su Ming's brows, he narrowed his eyes slightly, then lifted his right hand and swung it. Immediately, the map disappeared.

At that moment, a gold ray of light appeared in the sky above the planet which looked like it had shot through the boundless galaxy to reach the place. It erupted with a bang, dyeing the universe in gold.

"The Order of Golden Dawn has arrived. War Chamber's Earthen Pole, march at full speed!" the man immediately said as a brilliant light shone in his eyes.

His voice was gentle, but it instantly traveled beyond the planet and landed in all the cultivators' ears. The five million people immediately roared towards the sky together.

The warships charged forth, the giant beasts roared, piercing light erupted from the platforms, and they turned into long arcs with the five million cultivators to bring forth a picture that could cover even the universe itself as they charged forward at full speed.

The seven-colored planet let out a loud bang, and the huge beasts pulled it forward. The entire planet moved as quickly as a meteor, a telling sign of how quick were the cultivators surrounding it.

The man smiled faintly, picked up a pot of wine, poured himself a cup, and started drinking. A pensive look appeared in Su Ming's eyes. After a moment, he stood up.

"Since that is the case, I will leave once we arrive. Thank you for escorting me." Su Ming nodded at the man, then changed into the distance, immediately disappearing from the place. When he reappeared, he was already at the peak of a mountain on the other side of the planet.

As for the bald crane, with a great reluctance to leave, it swept up all the pots of wine and quickly chased after Su Ming.

The man smiled faintly and stared at the spot Su Ming had just vacated.

"He knows that I don't welcome him. At least he's a tactful Dynast." The man swung his right arm, and another pot of wine appeared on the table.

Chapter 1115 Opening the Abyss Gate

Su Ming sat on a mountain in the planet with the seven-colored lights. When he lifted his head to look at the sky, he found that there were no clouds, only a muddled scene that looked like flowing streams of water. It was somewhat similar to fog.

As it flowed by swiftly, starlight would occasionally squeeze through, but it would disappear in a flash, just like how Yu Xuan had disappeared from Morning Dao Sect.

Su Ming's face was slightly pale. He held his chest with his right hand while sharp stabs of pain came from within, causing grief and sadness to appear in his eyes.

After he left Morning Dao Sect, he once asked himself... what he still had left.

Everything in Dark Mountain was fake. His elder was Su Xuan Yi's disciple. His Master, Tian Xie Zi, had clearly also become Su Xuan Yi's chess piece and shared the same fate as the first God of Berserkers. His three senior brothers were lost in the endless mass of people in the universe, and he could not find them.

Bai Ling was his first love, but now that he looked at it, that love was fake. Everything contained falsehoods, making him remember his desire to walk out of the land of Berserkers and see the universe outside.

Di Tian had used him. Su Xuan Yi had treated him like a chess piece. His mother was immersed in the fifth kiln. When Su Ming turned his head back to look at his own life, there was always a huge hand that willfully manipulated his destiny time and again.

If it had been anyone else, Su Ming would not have been so emotionally affected, but the source of it all was not anyone else... but his own father.

Su Xuan Yi was not wrong. In his position, his actions were not wrong. How could a person who descended into madness to make his people rise to power once more be wrong? Su Ming might not agree with his logic of not having a home without kin, but it was just as he said, Su Ming did not hate him. He only resented him.

What did Su Ming have to hate about a man who sacrificed everything he had for his people to raise to power once more? After all, he could understand it. However, he could not accept that he had been a chess piece since birth, and that all of his friends had become Su Xuan Yi's chess pieces simply because they got close to him.

This was what he refused to accept.

Yu Xuan...

Su Ming wanted to go to the Emperor of Abyss' True World and search for her, but what right did he have to go there? His righteous ardor? His recklessness? With Su Ming's level of cultivation, it was a simple fact that he could not go to the Emperor of Abyss' True World to save Yu Xuan.

Su Ming understood this. If he wanted to go to the Emperor of Abyss' True World, then the first thing he needed to do was to fuse with his real physical body so that his level of cultivation would rise. Only then could he succeed in saving Yu Xuan!

After all, he knew that he only had one chance, just one chance.

"It looks like a brilliant life, but it's all just a joke," Su Ming mumbled in anguish. He did not want things to be this way, he did not want to accept them being this way, and was still trying to control his destiny, but in the end, he found out that he was still sent around by someone else.

"I just... want to understand what is going on. If you let me understand and didn't use my friends, I would have helped you wholeheartedly, father. For your ideals, I would have given up everything.

"Is this... too much to ask?" Su Ming asked softly while staring at the moving sky.

"I just... want a home." Su Ming lowered his head and closed his eyes, stopping his tears from flowing down his cheeks.

"Is it really... too much to ask?"

Wind blew past Su Ming's body. After a long, long while, he opened his eyes. They were unfocused, and his heart was filled with dreariness. A deep wave of loneliness washed over him.

This loneliness came from his soul and his age. It lingered for a long time and refused to leave. The reason for it was that he was alone, but it had nothing to do with any desire for love. He was a wanderer who did not have a home sitting on a mountain while he was surrounded by an army of five million cultivators from the War Chamber's Earthen Pole and mumbling about the one thing he longed for the most in his life... a home.

"For my family, I could overturn the galaxy and give up on everything. I just want... a home."

Su Ming sighed softly. That sigh contained his loneliness and desolation. When he opened his eyes, he stared at the sky and shook his head. He understood that what he desired might be the simplest thing to obtain for other people, but for him, it was incredibly difficult.

In silence, Su Ming patted his storage bag with his right hand. Immediately, a three-leafed grass appeared on his palm. He had obtained this item in the fifth kiln, and it was something that could allow a person to sense the laws of fate.

"Control the fates of the world around you and control your own fate... Fate..." Su Ming mumbled. After stared at the blade of grass for a time, he closed his eyes again. He could only hide his loneliness and bury his sadness as well as his desolation. He had to remain strong, because everything in the future was fated. He had to continue becoming stronger so that he could truly be in control of everything.

He would use the power that controlled the universe to create his own home!

At that moment, a determination that would no longer be swayed rose in Su Ming!

"I will have a home... a home where I will have a father, a mother, the elder, my friends, my Master, a lover, and all the people I am familiar with.

"Even if the universe is destroyed, even if Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos falls, even if Saint Defier and Dark Dawn go to war, even if disaster falls and calamities come one after another, and even if I have to experience countless reincarnations... I will create a home that belongs to me!

"This is my Dao, my life. I will create this home. Even if this home is in the Abyssal World, I will create it on my own!"

The blade of grass in Su Ming's hand shuddered when a will so firm it could affect one's whole life rose in Su Ming's heart. Gradually, it turned into threads of green light that fused into Su Ming's palm and gradually disappeared without a trace. At that moment, Su Ming opened his eyes, and as determination appeared in them, a presence akin to spring surrounded him.

At that moment, the soul of the Abyss Builders in Su Ming let out an astonishing roar.

In the mid of it, Su Ming's soul started boiling. All his blood turned into complicated runic symbols. They flowed through him, and his soul also turned into a large number of runic symbols.

In fact, there were also illusory ones around him. They surrounded his body, and in an instant, they turned into a storm.

When rumbling sounds reverberated in the air, the bald crane widened its eyes beside Su Ming and swiftly retreated.

"The presence of the Abyss... the celestial origin energy of Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos... the reason behind Saint Defier and Dark Dawn fighting over this place... It lies between light and darkness... A power that can bring forth light and dark with a single thought..."

The bald crane shuddered. A muddled look appeared in its eyes, and something seemed to have appeared again among its scattered memories, causing it to instinctively mumble under its breath before pain appeared on its face. The bald head seized its head tightly and moved back with a loud screech.

During that instant, long arcs shone in the sky, and Zhu You Cai as well as Flame Fiends' Progenitor arrived to protect the area around Su Ming. Much to their shock, they saw him being surrounded by a storm made of runic symbols.

They could clearly sense a power and presence they could not describe within that storm. It was incredibly strange. It was not strong, but it possessed a power that made even Zhu You Cai feel as if his soul and body were trembling.

The effect was even more prominent on Flame Fiends' Progenitor. He stared at the runic symbol around Su Ming in a state of great shock, because he realized... that there was... the feeling of the celestial origin of Flame Fiends' lives contained in one of the countless runic symbols.

It was as if one of them symbolized all of the Flame Fiends!

Yet it was so insignificant in the storm as if it was just a drop in an ocean!

"What is this?!"

Flame Fiends' Progenitor and Zhu You Cai were not the only ones reacting this way at that moment. The man known as Wild Dog and the three armored people beside him on the planet jolted simultaneously. In shock, they stared in the direction of Su Ming's mountain. Their breathing quickened. They were far from that mountain, but it was precisely because they were so far away that they could clearly sense... something that resembled a power of their souls. But instead of resonating with them individually, it came from the soul of their races!

The expression of the middle-aged man who was drinking by himself changed swiftly at that moment. He looked in Su Ming's direction, and his right hand quivered faintly. A huge storm raged in his heart. He belonged to a race which had vanished from the universe, so he had long been the only one left.

Yet at that moment, he could sense... the soul of his race from Su Ming's direction!

"What's going on?!" The middle-aged man's breathing quickened. The five million cultivators from the War Chamber's Earthen Pole beyond the planet came to an abrupt halt and turned their heads back to look at the seven-colored planet. During that moment, those who came from different races sensed the presences and souls of their races from the seven-colored planet!

Dao Ocea, which was in Morning Dao Sect, had begun raging at that moment. The sea of fog howled, and the surface of the sea turned into a huge face. It belonged to the Predecessor of Dao Ocean, and a brilliant light shone in his eyes.

"Another person opened the Abyss Gate. I wonder... what sort of will is contained in his Abyss Gate. I wonder how much it'll grow. Will he eventually assimilate with all the other people who opened the Abyss Gate... or will he truly be able to open the door... leading to a uniform will?!"

At the same time, Su Xuan Yi shuddered while seated. His eyes flew open, and when he cast his gaze on the chamber, he looked as if he could see through space and see everything that he wished to see.

"One of the three great inborn abilities of our race... opening the Abyss Gate," Su Xuan Yi mumbled. After some time, he sensed the presence of Su Ming's Abyss Gate, and anguish gradually appeared on his face.

"The will to protect... the desire for a family... Ming Er, one of these days... I will definitely make up to you... I will..."

1. Abyssal World: Mentioned before that Abyss Builders will open their own Abyssal World.

Chapter 1116 Thirst

The three great inborn abilities of the Abyss Builders were the power to control the flow of time, to Possess all living beings, and to open the Abyss Gate!

These three great inborn abilities led to the Abyss Builders' strength and glory!

However, not all Abyss Builders had them. Out of the three, the power to control time was the most common. It could be said that one out of every thousand Abyss Builders would understand how to use this inborn divine ability of theirs.

As for the ability to Possess all lives, it was much harder than the ability to control the flow of time. Similarly, there was only one out one thousand Abyss Builders who would possess it. However, these one thousand people could not be ordinary Abyss Builders. They had to be people who already controlled the flow of time.

It might seem as like there were only a few people who could have both inborn abilities, but in truth, with the number of Abyss Builders around in the past, there were quite a lot of people like that.

One of the necessities to awaken the inborn abilities was Abyss Builders' blood. The purer the blood, the more likely would that Abyss Builder be able to awaken their inborn abilities!

The third inborn ability, which was the ability to open the Abyss Gate, was slightly more common. The probability of it awakening was one out of ten. However, these ten people had to have understood how to Possess and have full control over time!

When Su Ming was in the land of Berserkers, he had showed the signs of the Abyss' Awakening and had obtained the power to control time. Destiny had been created when the past and future fused together, allowing his inborn ability to gradually gain perfection.

When he left the land of Berserkers and was being devoured by the Crimson Python Phoenix, his inborn ability to Possess was awakened due to the stimulation. It was as if some sort of instinct in him had activated, presenting him with the second inborn divine ability of the Abyss Builders.

Many years had passed since then. With dead stillness in his heart, Su Ming had buried the complicated feelings and his sorrow while sitting alone on the planet, and during that

instant, with the help of the blade of grass containing the laws of fate, the third great inborn ability of the Abyss Builders was activated!

When the Abyss Builders' ability to control the flow of time reached its peak, they could control the flow of time and become the masters of time. If the second inborn ability reached its pinnacle, they could fuse all of their clones into their real body and attain the peak of their cultivation!

The opening of the Abyss Gate, the third ability of the Abyss Builders, was the most mysterious of them all. It was also the strongest inborn ability that practically no Abyss Builder had managed to master!

It was the ability to resurrect others and a power to create their own World. It was a nature defying power that could allow them to create their own Abyssal World and resurrect all the dead!

However, creating the Abyssal World was too hard of a task. No one had been capable of doing it since the ancient times. Not even the powerful Progenitor of the Abyss Builders had been to finish it.

Opening the Abyss Gate was just the first stage of the divine ability, and there were plenty of others after it. However, just the activation of the Abyss Gate was already equivalent to opening a door leading to an even higher level of power.

A whirlwind surrounded Su Ming. It was full of countless runic symbols, and each one of them symbolized the soul of a race in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos.

While in the whirlwind, Su Ming sat with closed eyes. His hair danced in the air, and while he was never tall and bulky, he was definitely not thin and lanky. However, during that instant, his body started withering, as if all his blood and flesh were being absorbed by some unknown entity.

At the same time, the legacies of the Abyss Builders hidden in his soul appeared in his mind, causing him to instantly understand what was happening to him at that moment.

It was the change of flesh, blood, soul to life. It was something that all Abyss Builders had to go through once they opened the Abyss Gate. Large quantities of blood, flesh, essence, and soul were needed to completely open the Abyss Gate.

Su Ming had only activated it and not completely opened it. He could clearly sense that his body seemed to have become a bottomless pit, and there seemed to be a gate at the depths of it.

Waves of Aura of Abyss spread out from the gate, and Su Ming understood that if he opened that gate, his cultivation base would increase by leaps and bounds!

At the instant these thoughts appeared in his mind and he gained an epiphany towards the legacy of his blood, the whirlwind around him vanished, and everything around him returned to normal. Not a single whiff of Aura of Abyss spread out anymore, but Su Ming's body as he sat on the mountain had become completely thin and shriveled. He looked nothing like before.

And he was still becoming thinner, as if that bottomless pit wanted to devour all of his flesh and soul. The latter even started shaking.

Su Ming's eyes flew open, and a dark light shone in them. The instant Flame Fiends' Progenitor looked into them, he shuddered, and wisps of white smoke spread out from his ears, nose, eyes, and mouth towards Su Ming without his control.

This scene shocked Flame Fiends' Progenitor. He moved back swiftly, but he could not stop his life force and soul from spreading outwards. With just one glance, Su Ming had been able to cause this to happen, so there was no way Flame Fiends' Progenitor would not be in shock.

Fortunately, Su Ming had immediately shifted his gaze, allowing Flame Fiends' Progenitor to quickly circulate his cultivation base and force the life force and soul which had spread out from his body to fuse into him once more. His expression instantly turned pale, and with fear in his eyes, he looked towards Su Ming.

Zhu You Cai sucked in a deep breath as well, while as for the bald crane, it shuddered, and a dazed look appeared in its eyes. There were countless jumbled memories colliding against each other nonstop in its head.

"The Aura of Abyss... the death of all lives... the power to bring forth light and darkness with one thought... it is not allowed to appear..." The bald crane's eyes rolled back, and it fell to the ground with a loud thump. Once it quickly climbed back to its feet, it used its claws to seize its head again. A drawn out breath left its mouth.

"Darn it all, this is just someone asking for a beating. Come here, Abyss Dragon, let me hit you." The bald crane moved, and a black dot immediately flew out of its body. It instantly turned into an Abyss Dragon, but just as it was about to hit the bald crane, the bald crane quickly went up to it and kicked the Abyss Dragon...

Su Ming was not too far away. At that moment, even though his eyes were wide open, they were covered in a film of red. His body had also shrivelled in the blink of an eye. By then, his he was almost reduced to mere skin and bones, but even in this condition, Su Ming showed no signs of weakness. Instead, there was a vast power brewing continuously in his body.

"I need a sufficient amount of flesh, blood, and souls to activate the Abyss Gate and make it stop absorbing my life force." Su Ming's eyes sparkled. His heart was filled with anticipation at that moment. He looked forward with eagerness to what sort of changes

would occur once he eventually opened the Abyss Gate, one of the Abyss Builders' three great inborn abilities.

Su Ming was already aware of the might of being to reverse time and having a body capable of Possessing all lives. They gave Su Ming a feeling that he had an incredibly great ability to survive. The power of these two divine abilities was enough to make all people go mad for them.

At that moment, Su Ming might have only understood a bit of the activation of the third ability from the legacy in his soul, but it was still enough to make his heart tremble. His eyes sparkled, and he looked towards the sky with the fog flowing around it in streams. Never in his life had he yearned for war... to come sooner as much as he did at that moment.

He sucked in a deep breath and closed his eyes to suppress the excitement in his heart. He also continued suppressing the bottomless pit which had formed in his body. As he did so, various thoughts echoed in his mind.

'For this Dao which belongs to me and the creation of my home... even if I, Su Ming... have to overturn the universe and destroy all lives, I will complete it!'

Su Ming's breath quickened. By closing his eyes, he hid the determined yet crazed glare in them. Rays of gray, red, gold, and black light changed continuously on his body, making him feel as his thoughts were gradually being ignited by some sort of will in his heart. Eventually, it turned into a brilliant light in his eyes that was covered by his eyelids, but even so, his heart... went through a metamorphosis.

As time trickled by, one month passed. Throughout it, Su Ming remained seated on the mountain. His body had withered to the point that he looked like a skeleton. It seemed like he would come apart from a single gust of wind. However, the presence spreading out from his body had become increasingly more terrifying.

Beside him was the bald crane, Flame Fiends' Progenitor, and Zhu You Cai. They would occasionally cast their gazes on Su Ming. The past month had not been easy for them. Even if it was Zhu You Cai who came a bit closer to Su Ming, he would feel as if all his life force, soul, blood, and flesh were about to be sucked out.

During the month, the middle-aged man called Wild Dog had dropped by once, but when he approached Su Ming, his expression changed drastically, and without any hesitation, he left swiftly. He never returned again.

One day, a loud rumble came from the galaxy. The sounds of battle reverberated in the air... This was the first great battle the Earthen Pole had to face.

Before the five million cultivators from the War Chamber's Earthen Pole was a shining gray screen of light. Behind it were nearly one million cultivators from the Immortals' Union. They were staring at the army with shocked, pale faces.

Behind them were nine planets shaped in the form of spoons. Over there... was a Relocation spot which belonged to the Immortals' Union. It was also the territory of the Dust Dews.

As members of the Immortals' Union, Dust Dews' tribe leader, great elder, and other powerful warriors had solemn expressions with anxiety underlying it while they stood in the galaxy above the nine planets. Their gazes penetrated the screen of light and stared at the five million cultivators from the War Chamber standing with heinous murderous aura spreading from their bodies.

"Wherever the War Chamber passes..." At that moment, a velvety voice came from the planet on which Su Ming stayed and which was located behind the cultivators from the War Chamber. At almost the same instant, low growls came from the mouths of the five million cultivators. "There will be none who live!"

With a loud roar, the five million cultivators charged forward simultaneously. They spread out their cultivation bases and rushed at the screen of light.

Su Ming lifted his head where he sat on the planet. He opened his eyes which were filled with red. It desired blood, flesh, and souls, but he still retained his reasoning.

Chapter 1117 Evil Art

Boom!

A powerful wave of impact rushed out from the gray screen of light. When it swept outwards, it charged towards the five million cultivators from the War Chamber like a roaring wave, even spreading to the planet in which Su Ming resided.

At the same time, the gray screen of light started distorting violently, as if there was a violent power trying to forcibly tear it apart. It seemed to be struggling under it.

The near one million cultivators from the Immortals' Union behind the screen were pale, but when they saw that the screen had recovered and stopped distorting, their expressions filled with excitement.

"We ask the Nine Planets to battle!" the tribe leader of the Dust Dews said in an imposing voice while standing above the nine planets behind the cultivators and the screen.

As his voice reverberated in space, the nine planets immediately shone. A pillar of light charged out from each planet into space and shot through the screen to descend on the battlefield. They turned into nine figures of light which were about one hundred feet tall. They roared together, and nine presences as strong as those in Mastery Realm erupted from them. With that, they charged at the five million cultivators from the War Chamber.

At that moment, a cold harrumph came from one of the warships. There was absolutely no need for Wild Dog to take command for a battle of this scale. There were cultivators under him who could take up that task.

"Earthen Pole's third, sixth, and seventh battalions, Cut the Horizon!"

At the instant these words were spoken, around one million and five hundred thousand cultivators took a step forward. Their actions were uniform and their presences similar. The trajectory for the circulation of their cultivation bases was also exactly same, and the same divine ability was used.

A huge sword manifested on top of each of their heads at that instant. The swords shone with a bright, glossy light that was piercing to the eye and covered the entire galaxy. When the one million and five hundred thousand cultivators roared, the swords rose with a howl and fused, turning into a sword of light that was one hundred thousand feet long.

It hummed, and as if there was an invisible giant holding onto it in the galaxy, it cut down toward the gray screen of light.

The cultivators of the Immortals' Union were shocked. While still behind the screen, they heard an astonishing, deafening roar when the sword of light touched the gray screen of light. With a bang, the screen crumbled. It was completely and utterly cut by the sword!

"Wherever the War Chamber passes...!"

The voice who had previously called out for the cultivators to gather to execute the Art echoed in space at that moment once more. It was answered by the five million cultivators roaring simultaneously.

"There will be none who live!"

Boom!

The five million cultivators turned into five million long arcs that charged towards the one million cultivators of the Immortals' Union. Their enemy was exposed once the screen of light had shattered.

This was not a battle where the parties involved were well-matched in strength. It did not matter whether it was the number or their levels of cultivation, there was a great

disparity between all of them. The slaughter turned the cultivators from the Immortals' Union into nothing more than scattered sand. They could not hope to compare to Morning Dao Sect's most elite cultivators from the War Chamber.

When the nine figures of light with the power of those in Mastery Realm were about to attack, nine old men flew out swiftly from the warships. As they laughed loudly, their cultivation bases spread out from them, showing that they were all in Mastery Realm. Bloodlust appeared on their faces, and with a heinous, murderous aura, they charged towards the figures of light.

Morning Dao Sect had decided that it would finally use its full force. It had deployed all of its most powerful warriors with the intention... to launch a blitz attack on the Immortals' Union!

The sect leaders wanted to destroy the entire Immortals' Union in one go. At that moment, they were like a huge sleeping beast which had awakened from its slumber and revealed its fangs at the leopards and wolves around it. The roar it sent at the sky could shake the heavens.

The five million cultivators from the War Chamber rushed past the broken screen like wolves which into a herd of sheep. Shrill screams of pain rose into space in an instant, and booming sounds echoed nonstop. With every single step it took, the army of five million cultivators spilled blood and crushed souls.

It was at this moment that a long arc rushed out from the planet which belonged to the War Chamber. That long arc shone with a still light, and within it was an emaciated body as thin as a skeleton. Needless to say... it was Su Ming!

His eyes were bloodshot. The bottomless pit formed by the Abyss Gate in him was continuously devouring everything about him. If Su Ming had not been suppressing it with his full power during the past month, his body and soul would have probably been destroyed a long time ago.

After all, when there was someone among the Abyss Builders who was about to open the Abyss Gate in the Fifth True World, the other Abyss Builders would take a long time to make preparations before allowing them to do so under their protection. Once the person succeeded, they would require a large amount of blood and flesh to replenish what they had lost and stabilize the Abyss Gate.

However, Su Ming's activation of the Abyss Gate was due to all sorts of coincidences, and because of it, he hadn't had time to make ample preparations. However, the battle between Morning Dao Sect and the Immortals' Union gave him a serendipity of blood and flesh that even his people in the Fifth True World would not have been able to obtain.

When he rushed out, a monstrous, murderous aura erupted from his body with a bang, and he was so quick that he instantly shot past the warships as well as the other cultivators from the War Chamber. Wherever he went, the heart of all the cultivators on the warships and those before them would tremble. A strong feeling as if their souls, flesh, and blood were about to be sucked out rose in them.

That feeling appeared only for an instant before it gradually disappeared once Su Ming left into the distance. However, the shock that remained in their hearts would not and could not disappear.

Su Ming charged forward. In just the span of a few breaths, he rushed past the shattered screen of light and straight into the army of the Immortals' Union. The moment he entered the fray with bloodshot eyes, many cultivators executed their divine abilities and charged towards him.

But the instant they approached him, their expressions changed drastically. No matter in what frenzy they had pushed themselves, they all started trembling furiously. The feeling of their soul, flesh, blood, and life force being sucked away shocked them, and it also gave rise to an indescribable terror in their hearts.

Su Ming lowered his head, then raised his arms and pushed them sideways. A shocking rumble instantly reverberated in space, and a gigantic vortex appeared around him. It spun about and covered a circular area of one thousand feet. After just one spin, shrill screams of pain immediately rose in the area around Su Ming, and they were all piercing to the ears.

Nearly one hundred cultivators in an area of one thousand feet shook. Most of their life force had turned into white smoke that was forcibly extracted from their ears, nose, eyes, and mouth. When it fused into Su Ming's body, their blood dried up, and their flesh withered. In an instant, they were reduced to an emaciated state.

Fear and despair appeared in their eyes, and their souls... fused into Su Ming's body as it was continuously sucked out through their eyes, ears, nose, and mouth. A large amount of white smoke seemed to surround Su Ming. When it vanished, he stood in space alone. The near one hundred cultivators around him had collapsed together and scattered like ashes.

Su Ming's body was as thin and lanky as ever, but some color had returned to his skin.

"Evil Art! That's an Evil Art!" someone in the distance shouted out with terror.

The area around Su Ming was empty, allowing other people to be able to instantly notice what had happened around him. It was especially so for the cultivators from the War Chamber. Shock appeared on their faces, and if it was not because of the Sacred Constellation Robe on Su Ming's body and that he still somewhat resembled Dao Kong

even though he was only skin and bones, even they might have immediately attacked him at that moment.

Su Ming's appearance and his subsequent killing of one hundred people was insignificant to the Immortals' Union, but his method shocked all the people who saw it.

However, there was no time for a person to think too much during a battle. After a short pause, the fighting continued. Su Ming moved, and wherever he went, all the people would scream shrilly while their bodies and souls were destroyed, then absorbed by Su Ming. The red in his eyes gradually faded away, and his body slowly recovered a little. The Abyss Gate in his body shone with rays of dark light at that moment, and a large amount of Aura of Abyss filled his body. His level of cultivation erupted in such a great manner that it seemed as if there was no end to it.

'Kill them!'

Su Ming was so quick that when he charged forward, there was no need for him to use any divine abilities. He only had the power of the Abyss Gate absorb all the life force around him. To him, the activation of the Abyss Gate required flesh, blood, and souls. If he did not absorb these things, they would be absorbed from him until he became a mummy. Besides, Su Ming had no emotional attachment whatsoever to the Immortals' Union or Morning Dao Sect. Even if all of them died, he would not show a hint of compassion.

He only cared about his friends. Even if the heavens collapsed, the earth shattered, and all living beings died, as long as his family and friends were around, nothing else mattered to him.

If he could create his own family in which all the people he cared about were beside him by exchanging the flesh and blood of all lives and the life force of the universe for it... he would do so without any hesitation.

Even if he would be known as a bloodthirsty maniac hated by all, he would not care.

Bang!

One thousand people around Su Ming had their bodies and souls destroyed simultaneously. All their life force and souls were swiftly absorbed by him. He swiftly turned around and lifted his right hand to point at the center of the brows of a cultivator who had approached him quietly. He penetrated his skull with one finger and sank deep into his head. Then, as the gaze of the Almighty in Mastery Realm who belonged to the Immortals' Union filled with disbelief because he was killed with just one strike, Su Ming absorbed all of his life force and soul.

As he stood above the nine planets, the tribe leader of the Dust Dews fixed his stare on the Sacred Constellation Robe. Then, he shouted shrilly, "Kill him! He's a direct

descendant of Morning Dao Sect! Kill him! Even if our entire race is wiped out, we have to make Morning Dao Sect pay the price!"

Dozens of figures beside him charged forward instantly with loud whistles. All of these people were old men, and they were the elders of the Dust Dews. All of them had once been this particular race's tribe leader but had retired at some point. Right then, when their race came face to face with the threat of being completely wiped out, they moved together.

"Kill me?" Su Ming turned his head around to look and lifted his right foot to take a swift step forward to charge towards the incoming dozens of people. At the moment they drew close to each other, he raised his right hand and pointed at the universe.

"Mountain Shifter!"

When he spoke, the universe immediately roared. Countless mountains instantly appeared around him and pushed down on the dozens of people who were closing in on him!

Chapter 1118: Direct Entrance

Before he reached Mastery Realm, Su Ming had already been able to kill Almighties. When he was in the area used for the Anointment Ceremony for Morning Dao Sect, he could already fight against eight Almighties in Mastery Realm. Later, not only had he reached Mastery Realm and gained an epiphany regarding this particular stage, he had also manifested all five fingers for this Realm. In fact, due to the blade of grass fusing into his body, he had also opened the Abyss Gate.

At that moment, Su Ming was a powerful warrior who could fight against those in Life Realm. There was no lack of Almighties among the dozens of cultivators rushing towards him, but they were all not Su Ming's opponent!

When Mountain Shifter was activated, the world rumbled. The universe tumbled about, and countless mountains pushed down with loud rumbles. They charged towards the dozens of people. When the rumbles became deafening, the group coughed up blood and tumbled backwards.

Su Ming took a step forward, and he was so quick that he instantly closed in on one person. Then, he brought his right hand up and tapped the person between his brows. That cultivator shuddered, and all his life force as well as his soul were instantly absorbed from his body. He then scattered as ashes.

Su Ming moved, appearing and disappearing in a flash seventeen times. Before the seventeen cultivators even had the chance to scream, their bodies dissipated. Vast quantities of life force surged into Su Ming's body along with many souls and nourished his Abyss Gate. At the same time, it also eased the rate of the Abyss Gate's continuous absorption of Su Ming's own life force.

Eventually, he sighed in relief in his heart once he slightly recovered from his emaciated state. He still looked thin, but was no longer as frightening as previously.

'But... it's still not enough!'

Su Ming raised his head, and a glint appeared in his eyes. He stared at the nine planets in the distance with a malicious and strange glare. Without any hesitation, he charged forward. Wherever he went, all the cultivators who tried to block his path would have their life force and souls wiped off, causing Su Ming to look like a fierce tiger on the battlefield. No one dared to get close to him, let alone stop him.

He had a powerful cultivation base, a bizarre divine ability, and extreme speed. These things caused Su Ming to immediately become the center of attention on the battlefield. As the five million cultivators from the War Chamber continued with their slaughter and the one million cultivators from the Immortals' Union's Dust Dews fought back in a frenzy, the death count grew to a heinous degree.

Booming sounds reverberated on the battlefield, but Su Ming turned into a long arc and charged towards the nine planets. He looked as if he was about to cut through space.

He was so quick that he instantly closed in on one of the planets. The tribe leader and elders of the Dust Dews roared, and when another dozens of cultivators gritted their teeth and charged towards Su Ming, he performed an act that caused the fighting parties on the battlefield to be so shocked that they even forgot to continue fighting!

He... raised his right hand, and the instant the dozens of cultivators drew close to him, he seized one of the nine planets through the air. At the same time, the Abyss Gate in his body sent out a suction force, pulling in a great amount of energy. It traveled along his arm and went straight to his palm. Then, with a bang, a huge palm manifested in front of him with his power of a person in Mastery Realm.

The palm was a mere illusion, but it was one hundred thousand feet long. As loud rumbles echoed in space, it seized the planet. The power of the Abyss Gate erupted from it in vast quantities, making it shudder violently, and right before everyone's eyes, a drastic change great enough to shock all those who saw it appeared!

All the green plants on the planet withered, and all the rivers instantly dried up. The still ocean went dry. The countless ferocious spirits within it were reduced to ashes at the same moment. The ground turned dry and yellow. Cracks tore through the land, making it seem like there were earth dragons moving about and tearing the ground apart.

Mountains collapsed. When the people looked at the land, they saw the dried up and yellow earth swiftly expanding. In just a few breaths, the planet seemed to have walked through its entire life. Its life was swiftly being extinguished, and wisps of white smoke were continuously seeping out. All of them surged towards Su Ming and rushed into his ears, nose, mouth, and eyes.

The planet was also rapidly shrinking right before everyone's eyes. In the end, with a loud bang, it shattered and turned into countless fragments that scattered into ashes as they tumbled backwards. The ashes contained all the lives and the Essence of the World which belonged to the planet, and as it collapsed, they turned into white fog that filled the entire area and instantly surrounded Su Ming.

In just the span of a few breaths, all the white fog was completely absorbed. When Su Ming was revealed once again before the people's eyes, he was no longer thin and lanky, but had returned to his original appearance.

He was dressed in the Sacred Constellation Robe while his black hair danced in space. The third eye at the center of his brows seemed had been activated, giving Su Ming a mystifying air. There was also a dense wave of Aura of Abyss surrounding him. All the people who were close enough felt like a chill would creep up their hearts the moment they cast a glance at him.

This scene caused the pupils of all the cultivators in the area to shrink. Their minds went slightly blank at that moment. Destroying a planet was not difficult for an Almighty, but Su Ming had not just destroyed it. He had... absorbed all the life force of the Essence of a World.

There was no way anyone could not be shocked by this. In fact, the dozens of Dust Dew cultivators who were rushing at Su Ming came to an abrupt halt from it. As their faces turned pale, they immediately fell backwards and did not dare to get any closer to Su Ming.

After a short period of silence, the battle resumed. This time, the intensity was no longer the same as before... The cultivators from the Immortals' Union seemed to have lost most of their will to fight back after witnessing Su Ming's act of absorbing the life force from a planet. They no longer had any spirit, while the five million cultivators from the War Chamber were the exact opposite. Their fighting spirit had been rekindled, and they marched forward with loud booming sounds, continuously reaping lives without running into any form of resistance.

Su Ming did not bother about the parties involved in the battle. A brilliant light shone in his eyes, and when he looked towards the remaining eight planets, he charged towards them.

Time trickled by, and about eight hours passed. Rumbling sounds had continuously rang out while the nine planets were being absorbed by Su Ming, but once the last one shattered, the place gradually fell silent.

There were countless corpses floating in the galaxy, along with a large number of broken limbs. A bloody stench filled the area. The cultivators from the War Chamber had split into three groups. Two of them were chasing down the fleeing cultivators of the Immortals' Union while the last one was walking through the battlefield. Whenever they found any corpse that was still in marginally good shape, they immediately crushed its skull. This act that was reminiscent of performing a last hit on an enemy was a habit of the War Chamber, and they did it after every battle they won.

Wherever the War Chamber passes, there will be none who live—these were not empty words.

Another six hours passed. As the groups of the War Chamber who had went to chase down the fleeing cultivators from the Immortals' Union returned, they reorganized themselves and found that they had only lost one hundred thousand something cultivators from the Earthen Pole. They then charged into the distance once more with booming sounds reverberating in space. The long arcs from the warships, the roars from the large beasts, and the movement of the planet stirred ripples in the area. They swept aside all the drifting corpses and dissipated the bloody stench.

The battle had already ended. The murderous aura of the five million cultivators from the War Chamber's Earthen Pole had grown thicker, but when they occasionally turned their gazes back to look at the planet, their eyes filled with fervent ardor and respect.

Su Ming once again sat on the mountain he had claimed with eyes closed to meditate.

There were plenty of cultivators from the Immortals' Union who had died in his hand during the battle, and he had also directly crushed the Dust Dews' homeland—the nine planets!

From that moment onwards, the Dust Dews disappeared. This race no longer existed in True Morning Dao World.

This was war. There was no right or wrong in it, only those who stood in opposition to each other!

While Su Ming meditated, the Fog of Abyss which was the Abyss Gate in him swiftly crystallized. When he looked at it, most of it had already crystallized. With just a little more, the entire thing would turn into a crystal.

Time passed, and Su Ming spent all of it in meditation. Battles erupted all along the way, sending the War Chamber through a dozen battles of various scales in one month of slaughtering their way into the Immortals' Union.

They were not the only ones fighting. War reports would be sent into Wild Dog's hands almost every single day with a unique method. With Su Ming's status, he could naturally read those reports as well.

Morning Dao Sect had deployed ten armies of cultivators this time around, and most of them numbered in millions. They slaughtered their way into the Immortals' Union from ten different directions, intending to determine the winner of the war in one go.

This was the first time Morning Dao Sect had erupted and fought back in such a manner, taking the Immortals' Union by surprise and forcing it to continuously retreat. There were ten armies, and wherever they went, they almost always left the area in complete devastation. They slaughtered to a heinous degree and massacred whole races.

They did accept any form of surrender!

Since these people had betrayed them before, their only fate was complete annihilation of their race. Morning Dao Sect's counterattack was like lightning and filled its territories with a bloody stench.

The closer the armies got to the core of the Immortals' Union, the stronger resistance they faced. After about half a month left before the War Chamber's Earthen Pole would reach the core of the Immortals' Union, they ran into a battle that was on a far greater scale than before.

With only around four million cultivators left, the War Chamber fought against an army of cultivators numbering to nearly three million from the Immortals' Union. The slaughter had already been going on for nearly a day.

During it, the number of deaths on both sides was so devastating that Wild Dog had personally come forth to command the battle. The roars of beasts filled many corners of the battlefield. When the loud bangs of warships collapsing reverberated in the air, the seven-colored light from the planet where Wild Dog was swept outwards once every hour.

There were hundreds of huge eyeballs floating in space over at the camp which belonged to the Immortals' Union. They constantly observed all the changes on the battlefield. Beneath them, at the rear end of the camp, was a nine-storey tower. Orders came from it to lead the cultivators from the Immortals' Union in the battle.

A large number of cultivators that could be clearly identified as Immortals surrounded the tower while standing on flying swords. Their gazes were cold and ghastly as they stared at the cultivators from the War Chamber in the distance.

In fact... Su Ming even saw two black-robed people further into the distance!

They were the exact same as the one he'd seen in Dao Ocean's illusion!

However, he did not see the giants who were known as Ancient Deities. Yet Su Ming had a feeling that if the black-robed people were around, then there was a high possibility that the Ancient Deities would appear as well!

Chapter 1119: The Real Black-Robed People

Su Ming did not attack. He sat on the mountain on the seven-colored planet, and with sparkling eyes, he stared at the planet in the distance. With his level of cultivation, he could see everything on the battlefield clearly.

Most of the time, his gaze landed on the two black-robed people, and when he narrowed his gaze, great fighting spirit was hidden within it.

He had fought against their companion before, but that was in an illusion and not real. Back then, he had killed the black-robed man, but a lot of time had passed since then, and Su Ming had become much stronger. Because of it, he wanted to know just what would happen when he faced off against the black-robed people and the Ancient Gods with the seven stars at the center of their brows.

'I wonder would I get more from absorbing an Ancient God's life force and soul, or a planet's?' As brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes, and the fighting spirit in him grew even stronger.

The battle beyond the planet continued. Booming sounds echoed without end in space. The number of deaths on both sides was incredibly great. After all, this time, the cultivators of the War Chamber had to face off against another considerably large and powerful army from the Immortals' Union.

It had been formed by amassing the elites of all races.

In the mid of the rumbling, Su Ming could hear Wild Dog's enraged roars coming from the planet.

"Damn those hundreds of eyes from Phoenix Sect! With them around, all our actions can be seen clearly! Someone get over there and get rid of all those those eyes!"

The instant Wild Dog's roars echoed in the air, hundreds of cultivators charged forward from the warships. They were so quick that they instantly went past the battlefield.

Yet the instant they drew close to the eyeballs, dozens of Immortals flew out from the tower of the Immortals' Union. With a swing of their arms, countless Sun Destroying Lightnings charged forward. Booming sounds surged into the air, and the hundreds of cultivators from the War Chamber immediately coughed up blood and fell back.

At almost the same moment, three figures flew out from the platforms behind the War Chamber's warships. They charged toward the eyeballs with their ripples of power surpassing those in Mastery Realm. They belonged to those in Fate Realm.

However, right when they approached the area, a cold harrumph reverberated in space from among the cultivators of the Immortals' Union around the tower. Three ancient old men moved, exuding power that was equivalent to those in Fate Realm. They charged towards the trio from the War Chamber, and as loud rumbling sounds shot into the air, the six people fought against each other before rushing higher into the heavens to open another battlefield above the main one below.

"Damn it!"

Wild Dog growled, and his voice echoed in the seven-colored planet. Su Ming narrowed his eyes slightly. He had seen the hundreds of Sun Destroying Lightnings previously, and his heart instantly began pounding in excitement. At that moment, he stood up swiftly.

"I'll help you!"

When he said that, his voice echoed in the planet, a glint shone in the furious Wild Dog's eyes. By then, Su Ming had already turned into a long arc. With a loud whistle, he rushed out of the planet and charged towards the hundreds of Eyes of the Sacred Temple.

His appearance immediately caught the attention of the sharp-witted people on the battlefield, especially the man with a lackadaisical expression on his face who was currently on the tower belonging to the Immortals' Union. He had his hands placed behind his back, and there was a gigantic ball of light in front of him. In it was a reflection of almost every single corner of the battlefield, showing him everything that happened in it.

He cast a glance at Su Ming in the ball of light before a glint appeared in his eyes. His lips curled up into a cold sneer.

"A direct descendant of Morning Dao Sect..."

At the instant he was about to send his order, his eyes suddenly focused. When Su Ming moved, he instantly crossed an endless distance to appear right next to the hundreds of eyeballs.

This speed caused the man to frown.

“Kill that person!”

The instant he gave the command, the dozens of Immortals immediately sported a sparkle in their eyes. At the instant Su Ming drew close to them, they charged out, and when they raised their right hands, dozens of Sun Destroying Lightnings could be found on each of their hands. They threw all of them simultaneously.

It was nearly one hundred Sun Destroying Lightnings. Any one of them could injure a cultivator in Solar Kalpa Realm, and with nearly one hundred of them around, even those in Mastery Realm would have to dodge. They could not challenge them directly.

However, a ferocious smile appear on Su Ming’s lips. He had been waiting for the Sun Destroying Lightnings all this while. The moment they came charging towards him, he raised his right hand and swung his arm. Ecang’s presence erupted from him, and in a single moment, it enveloped all of the near one hundred Sun Destroying Lightnings.

There were no rumbles, no tremors, only the near one hundred Sun Destroying Lightnings fusing together to turn into drops of faint golden blood that merged together. Su Ming sucked them in with his next breath.

A loud bang came from his body. As he swiftly fused with the blood, his spirits lifted. While the Immortals were stunned, he swiftly moved forward, and he was so quick that he instantly closed in on one of them.

He then raised his right hand and struck the center of that cultivator’s brows. His actions could not even be seen with the naked eye. With another move, he appeared in front of the second cultivator and did the same thing. After he disappeared and reappeared in a flash for a dozen times, only then did a loud bang raise into space. The dozen-something cultivators immediately withered and turned into ashes. Their storage bags also instantaneously vanished when a black ray of light shot past them.

The bald crane’s excited expression was hidden in the black light. With a flash, it rushed towards another direction on the battlefield.

Killing a dozen something Immortals was as easy as breathing to Su Ming. At the instant they died, he raised his right hand and seized space. Immediately, the hundreds of Eyes of the Sacred Temple trembled, and numerous blood capillaries instantly showed up.

At that moment, a cold harrumph came from the camp which belonged to the Immortals’ Union. The noise had been made in the distance, but the figure stepped in space to instantly appear beside Su Ming. It was a red-faced old man with a big and burly body. He looked incredibly sturdy and did not seem like an aged person. Based on his back alone, he resembled a strong and healthy man.

His hair was graying though. At the instant he closed in, the power of those belonging to Life Realm erupted from him, and it turned into a mighty pressure that charged towards Su Ming before pressing down on him.

“Kneel!”

The old man’s voice was like a tidal wave. When it reverberated in space, it was deafening, but at the instant that mighty pressure attacked Su Ming, he did not pay any attention to the old man in Life Realm. Instead, with a glint in his eyes, he cast a glance at the two black-robed people beyond the tower of the Immortals’ Union. They did not seem to intend to join the battle, or rather, the time for them to attack had yet to arrive. Su Ming narrowed his eyes, and a sinister smile appeared on his lips.

“Slaughtering my way in will be a little hard, but luring the both of you here... won’t be difficult!”

The bald crane’s eyes shone at that moment. Immediately, a black light that surged into the heavens erupted from its body as well as that of Su Ming!

Light of Extreme Darkness!

With a loud whoosh, the black light covered the entire galaxy and enveloped the old man. His expression changed drastically, and a chill went down his back that made even his heart tremble. But that was not all. Besides the chill, the old man also felt as if countless arrows had shot through his whole body. The intense pain made him unable to move his body even a single bit.

At the instant the Light of Extreme Darkness appeared, Su Ming moved. When he brought his right hand up, he did not attack the old man. Instead, he seized space, and as booming sounds reverberated intensely, the hundreds of Eyes of the Sacred Temple collapsed simultaneously. As each eyeball shattered, pained screams rang out, and a person flew out from inside. However, they did not manage to get far away before their bodies trembled. Their life force and souls were instantaneously extracted, and they were reduced to ashes.

“Good!” Wild Dog, who had been observing all along from the seven-colored planet, instantly shouted out with delight.

Without any hesitation, he swiftly issued a series of orders and had the army of the War Chamber to change their battle tactics. Using the most opportune time presented to them when the Eyes of the Sacred Temple had disappeared from the Immortals’ Union, the cultivators of the War Chamber instantly changed their battle formation and executed an even stronger attack.

As for the Immortals' Union, their army was caught in a slight chaos. The War Chamber had grown stronger while the Immortals' Union became weaker, and for a short period of time, it was forced back repeatedly.

"Who is that?!"

The lackadaisical man had an extremely solemn expression on his face at that moment. Killing intent shone in his eyes, but just as he was about to send an order, his expression suddenly changed. He saw one of the two Grand Immortals [1], the black-robed people with noble statuses, move forward on his own.

The two black-robed people belonged to the core of the Immortals' Union, and they were Immortals who came from the Higher Realm. They had descended among them from the vast and eternal pillar of light in the boundless universe. They had noble statuses, and no one could order them around. Even the council of the Immortals' Union would not dare to do so.

They were allies, but the black-robed people had joined the war on their own accord and mostly observed the battles. Only when they believed that they should attack did they attack.

At that moment, when the man noticed that one of the black-robed people had moved forward, a smile appeared on his face. He knew that the direct descendant of Morning Dao Sect who had destroyed the Eyes of the Sacred Temple was no longer any of his concern.

He had once seen the Grand Immortals attack, and he could not forget their strength even up to this date. It was especially so in regards to their divine abilities. Once the Grand Immortals attacked, the universe would definitely change.

"Interesting, I didn't expect to see Sir Kong Mo's Light of Extreme Darkness in this place!"

With contempt on his face and an arrogant superiority of an Immortal who had descended to the mortal world, the black-robed man moved forward. As with space opening up a path for him, he rushed towards the Light of Extreme Darkness.

At that moment, the Light of Extreme Darkness vanished. Su Ming intentionally put on a look of panic and retreated, intending to put an even wider distance between him and the tower. As he moved back, the paralyzed old man in Life Realm roared. Just as he was about to force himself to chase after him, the black-robed man walked past him.

"Stand down. This is my prey." His voice was flat and with an air of superiority.

When the black-robed man walked past the old man to chase after Su Ming, the old man in Life Realm froze. His expression changed repeatedly before he forced himself to

extinguish all the flames of anger in him. He turned around, and with a dark expression, he charged back to the tower without saying a single word.

Su Ming moved so quickly that he instantly left into the distance. The black-robed man behind him had a look of contempt on his face. With each step, he would cross a boundless distance, and with just three steps, he had already caught up to Su Ming, who was already a great distance away from the tower. They were already at the edge of the battlefield.

“You won’t be able to escape. Be good and let me capture you, then I will search through your memories. I will know how a barbarian and a savage like you managed to practice and produce the Light of Extreme Darkness.”

There was arrogance in the black-robed man’s voice. He made it sound as if the moment he attacked, all the cultivators in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos were not allowed to fight back, or else they would commit a heinous crime!

Translator’s Note:

1. Grand Immortal: Mentioned in ISSTH Chapter 1087.

Chapter 1120: Which Number are You Among the Greatmasters of Five Fingers

This tone and this arrogant attitude was one that perhaps not even Dao Ocean would be able to imitate... It was why the black-robed man in the illusion had not said such words during Su Ming’s trial.

Right then, once Su Ming heard it, even with his intelligence, he could not help but be stunned. That confident and forceful tone, that incredibly thick air of superiority, and the meaning behind the words implying that all the people in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos were barbarians and savages and had to worship him and even immediately commit suicide if he so commanded or else they would be offending him... this was the first time Su Ming had met such a strange and bizarre person in his life.

“Would I be committing a heinous crime if I fought back?” Su Ming stopped for a moment, and when he turned his head around, he looked towards the black-robed man.

“It is not just a heinous crime. All those who fight back should have their entire families slaughtered. You ran when you saw me just now, and that is already a great sin!” the black-robed man said arrogantly after lifting his head. At that moment, his eyes, which were hidden under his black hood, shone faintly.

"Then what should I do now?" Su Ming could not help but smile due to the black man's words. It had been a long time since he'd heard something so amusing, and he could not help but ask another question.

"Hmph, destroy your own cultivation base, break your arms and legs, and kneel in front of me. Beg for me to punish you, be obedient, let me search through your memories, and then offer your soul to me. Then, your sins will be pardoned." The black-robed man put on a presumptuous expression and stared at Su Ming with an air of those who regarded themselves superior.

"Lowly barbarian, if you wait for me to attack, you will suffer a hundred times more. You do not know the difference between us. With a raising of my hand, I can turn you into ashes. Giving you a chance to kneel is already a great gift, now kneel!" the black-robed man placed said with arrogance, his hands placed behind his back.

Su Ming remained silent. He stared at the black-robed man without being able to understand this person at all. After some time, he shook his head. He had no idea what to say to such a strange person.

"You do not know what is good for you, you fool. Barbarians are barbarians. I gave you a chance, and you refused it. You're just asking for death!"

The black-robed man let out a cold harrumph and took a step forward, completely disregarding Su Ming's level of cultivation. He walked straight up to Su Ming and raised his right hand to grab his neck.

"I will let you know just how great is the difference between you barbarians and us Grand Immortals. I will let you know just what great reward were my words previously. Right now, even if you decide to kneel, I will not give you a chance."

The black-robed man's right hand instantly sank into air. A layer of ripples spread out from his palm, making it look like his palm had seeped through space. In an instant, it appeared before Su Ming and went to grab his throat.

"You made three mistakes," Su Ming said flatly.

At the instant the black-robed man had his right hand come forth to grab him, Su Ming, too, brought his right hand up and grabbed the black-robed man's wrist. With a shake, the destructive power from his body surged into the black-robed man's body. Booming sounds reverberated in space, and the instant the black-robed man's expression changed, Su Ming moved forward and rammed his shoulder against him.

"First, you should not have been so noisy."

When the black-robed man coughed up blood, his expression changed drastically. However, Su Ming's right hand held his wrist like a clamp.

At the instant the black-robed man coughed up blood, the vast suction force from Su Ming's Abyss Gate spread out with a bang through his right hand. The black-robed man immediately cried out in pain, and his body withered. A large amount of life force was instantly sucked into the Abyss Gate.

"Impossible! You... You... You're not in Mastery Realm!"

As the black-robed man screamed in pain, unprecedented fear and shock appeared on his face. At that moment, the other black-robed man around the tower in the distance spotted a change in his expression. Without any hesitation, he took a step forward and charged towards the place.

"Second, you shouldn't have gotten so close to me."

Su Ming released his grip, but in an instant, he seized the top of the black-robed man's skull. When he tightened his grip, the black-robed man's shrill screams of pain reverberated through the entire battlefield. As he trembled, wisps of white smoke surged out from his ears, nose, mouth, and eyes. All of them were swiftly absorbed by Su Ming's right hand.

"Third, you shouldn't have made me hate you so much."

The instant Su Ming said those words, he exerted more force with his right hand, and with a loud crack, he shattered the black-robed man's skull. At the same time, the final hint of life force and the final bit of his soul erupted and were all absorbed by Su Ming.

It was also at that moment that the other black-robed man closed in with a loud whistle. He lifted his right hand and pointed at Su Ming, but before he could cast his divine ability, Su Ming looked at him with a glint in his eyes.

With the first black-robed man in his grip, he quickly spread a hint of his soul and had it surge into the now empty corpse. When he pushed it forward, its cultivation base erupted with a bang, and the Light of Extreme Darkness spread out.

All of this happened in an instant. Immediately after, the divine ability executed by the other black-robed man when he pointed forward appeared in a shocking manner!

"Still!"

With one word, he could immobilize Su Ming's body. If Su Ming had not seen this Art in the illusion from the trial, he would have definitely suffered greatly, since it would have been his first time seeing it. However, since he had already experienced this strange divine ability before, he was prepared for it.

At the instant that one word reverberated in space, the Light of Extreme Darkness erupted from him. He pushed the black-robed man in his hand forward, and the divine ability was blocked.

The corpse Su Ming had pushed forward came to a swift halt in the galaxy, as if it had been frozen. It had attracted all the force of the Immobilization Art from the black-robed man.

The Immobilization Art locked down souls, which was why even if there were obstructions in the way, they could still freeze a person. However, Su Ming had first had a bit of his soul fuse into the corpse in his hand to pass off an imitation as his genuine self, which had lured the Immobilization Art away from him. Then, he had the Light of Extreme Darkness block the Art, causing him to perfectly defeat it!

All of this might seem simple, and the others might not even be able to find anything strange or astonishing about it, but it was because they did not understand the power of the Immobilization Art. However, the black-robed man who had rushed in and cast the Art showed an unprecedented and drastic change in his expression. Disbelief filled his eyes, and he instinctively took a few steps backwards while his pupils shrank.

He could not imagine that there would be someone from this primitive and barbaric Expanse Cosmos where all the cultivators still borrowed or created laws and where no one understood the power of the celestial origin who would be able to break his Art. This was especially hard to believe when the person had broken the Art by exploiting the weakness which was known by a few people even in the 180 Expanse Cosmoses of Saint Defier.

“Sir, who are you?!”

As the black-robed man retreated, his tone turned incredibly grim. He could not regard this person who had killed his companion and broken the Immobilization Art as a barbarian.

The Light of Extreme Darkness was still spread out, but Su Ming stared at the black-robed man. The other's face might have been hidden under the black robe, but at moment, it was clear that he was extremely on guard. Su Ming's eyes narrowed slightly, and a brilliant glint no one could notice shone in his eyes.

“Which number are you among the Grandmasters of Five Fingers?” Su Ming suddenly asked. At the instant he said these words, the black-robed man's expression immediately changed, and he was also momentarily stunned.

The instant he was taken aback and his guard was broken, Su Ming took a swift step forward, then raised his right hand and formed a sword with it before cutting down in the direction of the black-robed man!

“God Slayer Art!”

Piercing golden light instantly appeared on Su Ming’s palm. At the same time, the power of cutting fate erupted with a bang from his body. Once it changed the laws in the galaxy around him, it turned into a power that would strike all of those he wished to strike.

All of this happened in an instant, and the price for the black-robed man’s momentary pause was the golden light of the God Slayer Art on Su Ming’s palm reflecting off his eyes. The black-robed man’s expression changed, and he raised his right hand to swing his arm forward before he seized the space in Su Ming’s direction with his withered right hand.

Loud rumbles surged into space. The power that would absolutely strike its target caused the golden light spreading out from Su Ming’s palm to turn into a sword aura which could shock even the heavens. Once it clashed against the black-robed man’s right hand, it turned into the third power contained within the God Slayer Art—rebound!

A loud bang shot up, causing the black-robed man to cough up blood and fall back. Since Su Ming had activated the Abyss Gate, all of his divine abilities gained an additional power, which was why the one slash containing three forms of power had a fourth change at that moment. The vast power of absorbing all forms of life force and souls rose swiftly, causing the black-robed man who coughed up blood to instantly wither a little, and even a portion of his soul had been forcefully sucked out of his body.

A glint appeared in Su Ming’s eyes. Without giving even a sliver of a chance to the black-robed man, he yanked up the corpse of the other black-robed man in his hand and charged towards the one who had coughed up blood, moving so quickly that he instantly closed in on him. At the instant the black-robed man raised his right hand to cast the Immobilization Art again, Su Ming fought back against it in the same manner. He then brought his left hand up to strike the black-robed man.

The galaxy and the universe roared. A huge palm manifested in front of Su Ming, and as if it was pushing against the galaxy, it landed on the black-robed man’s body. His robes puffed up. The black-robed man might have been able to resist this attack, but he coughed up a large mouthful of blood. His body fell back like a kite with its string snapped. Shock and disbelief appeared on his face. At that moment, when he retreated in haste, he suddenly remembered something.

After they had been sent to Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, only one of them had died in a battle in that long period of time. That companion had been killed by Morning Dao Sect. He also remembered that even one of the Ancient Gods had been killed by Morning Dao Sect.

When all these memories came to him, the black-robed man immediately withdrew without any hesitation. At that moment, all forms of status or attitude belonging to those

of the Higher Realm were forgotten. He raised his right hand, and as he fled, he formed a seal behind himself. All his power erupted from his body, and when a ripple of power spread out, a gigantic octothorpe [1] was formed.

This octothorpe surrounded Su Ming. At the same time, Su Ming's eyes sparkled. He raised his right hand. Without even forming a seal, he casually swung his arm.

"Time, turn back to seven breaths ago!"

The universe roared and changed. During that instant, time reversed, and the octothorpe around Su Ming disappeared. The black-robed man stopped fleeing, and instead returned to his previous location where Su Ming already waiting. He lifted his right hand and seized the black-robed man's neck!

Translator's Note:

1. Octothorpe: Means this #, the original is actually 井 (jing3), which LOOKS similar to the hashtag. Now 井 means well, so imagine that this guy is about to cast the well Art, but I guess his is a more advanced version, since the one previously formed a circle instead.

Chapter 1121: God

Su Ming squeezed the black-robed man's neck tightly and asked by his ear, "Who was it that allowed all of you to descend to Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos?!"

"You barbarian, even if you've mastered the power that is nearly to the Third Step's completion, you are still a barbarian!" the black-robed man cried out shrilly. Once he had his neck seized by Su Ming, his cultivation base started disappearing swiftly before it was instantly emptied. His life force and soul were being rapidly sucked out of his body, and this feeling of weakness reminded him of the time when he was still a mortal.

"Who allowed you to descend to Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos?!" Su Ming asked again, and a strange glare showed up in his eyes. When the black-robed man saw this, he laughed fiercely, and his face filled with scorn.

"No one can search through our souls. Even if you are near the Third Step's completion, you are still unworthy of searching through our souls! You want the answer?! Haha! Then look for it yourself!"

As the black-robed man laughed, Su Ming suddenly smiled faintly. The third eye at the center of his brows opened, and the instant that strange and bewitching eye showed up, he said softly, "Thank you."

At the instant Su Ming said these two words, the third eye at the center of his brows shone with a mystifying and enchanting light. When he looked over, the black-robed man's eyes were instantly magnified endlessly. With a loud whoosh, they were magnified an unknown amount of times, and Su Ming saw a figure at the depths of the pupils.

The eyes were windows to a person's soul. A person's personality and soul could be seen through them. This was not any sort of divine ability. In fact, even some of the old mortals who had gone through many ups and downs in their lives could do such a thing.

Su Ming could do this even better. With his third eye, he could see the black-robed man's soul straight through his eyes. There was absolutely no need for him to perform a Soulseek. Even if the black-robed man had a seal to protect his memories, Su Ming did not forcefully perform a Soulseek or fight against the seal with brute force. He only observed with another method.

Because of it, he did not trigger any of the protections placed on the black-robed man's memories in his soul. He had repeated the same question twice previously not for the man to answer, but to have it serve as a lead!

Those words were just that, a lead. Su Ming needed it so that the answer would appear in the black-robed man's head subconsciously. He would then use his third eye to see through the other's eyes and find the answers he sought in his soul.

He saw a middle-aged figure. It was dressed in a long blue robe. He had a head of long black hair, and his robe was incredibly lavish. There was a strange pattern sewn on it, and it looked like it symbolized Yin and Yang.

The man was incredibly handsome, but there was a boundless, ancient air spreading out from him. A power that made Su Ming's heart tremble manifested around him as well.

The instant Su Ming saw the vision in the black-robed man's eyes, the figure, which should have only been an afterimage in the man's memories, suddenly shone with a blinding light. The afterimage seemed to also suddenly possess intelligence, for it looked at Su Ming in one swift motion before letting out a soft gasp of surprise!

"I can't believe that the primitive and barbaric Arid Triad would have a cultivator such as you. You actually managed to form a connection with me, Xing Ji Dao, in this manner? Interesting. Since you're already here, then you might as well stay."

A glint appeared in the eyes of the man in blue. There was a faint smile on his face, but a vortex appeared in his eyes. It instantly went on to try and absorb Su Ming, as if he wanted to dig deep into his soul through his gaze and drag it over.

But at that moment, the Seed of Life Extermination in Su Ming's soul resisted violently. As a loud rumble resounded, a brilliant light showed up in the eyes of the man in blue robes. There was also a hint of shock and ferociousness in him.

“Dark Dawn’s power!”

Suddenly, the moment the Seed of Life Extermination fought back, the Abyss Gate in Su Ming’s body let out a powerful force aimed to devour all things. It also lashed out madly. It sucked in a swift breath and devoured a small portion of the power that had spread out from the afterimage belonging to the man in blue. With this, it also cut off Su Ming’s connection with him.

“Aura of Abyss... you... You are one of Arid Triad’s Abyss Builders!”

A low growl that caused Su Ming’s soul to shudder came from what remained after the connection was broken. The remnant of the man’s presence was far stronger than all the powerful warriors Su Ming had met in his life. In fact, it was even stronger than Sui Chen Zi!

Boom!

Su Ming shut his third eye, and his gaze disappeared from the black-robed man’s eyes. Everything that happened just then might have seemed to have taken a long time, but in truth, it was over in the blink of an eye. The strength of that person called Xing Ji Dao shocked Su Ming, but he also gained an even deeper understanding towards the 180 Expanse Cosmoeses belonging to Saint Defier.

“What did you do to me?!”

The black-robed man whose neck had been seized by Su Ming shuddered. He could sense the drastic change in his body just then. It might have only lasted for a short period of time, but it left his heart in a state of shock.

Su Ming cast the black-robed man a glance before he said faintly, “Xing Ji Dao.”

The black-robed man’s expression instantly changed, but before he could say anything else, Su Ming tightened his grip, and with a bang, the black-robed man’s body shattered. His soul and life force turned into wisps of white smoke that surged into Su Ming’s eyes, nose, ears, and mouth, and he sucked all of them in with a single inhale.

At the same time, the Abyss Gate in his body let out a loud boom. The life force and soul from the two black-robed men had made it expand slightly, but that was it. What

made the Abyss Gate let out the loud bang and let out a vast amount of Aura of Abyss to fill Su Ming's entire body was the small portion of the will in Xing Ji Dao's afterimage.

To the current Su Ming and the Abyss Gate, this was a great supplement that they had never seen before. It was a supplement that was far greater than the absorption of nine planets. As a jolt ran through Su Ming's body, he threw his head back and roared.

A loud boom rang out from his body, and the vortex of Aura of Abyss that was just like a bottomless pit turned into a crystal. It continued becoming larger, and when it occupied a small portion of Su Ming's body, it shattered, and a black gate appeared!

The Aura of Abyss spreading out from that gate was incredibly terrifying, and it was instantly absorbed by Su Ming's physical body. However, it seemed to be rejecting it, unable to absorb a lot of it. However, just absorbing a small portion had caused a loud rumble to rang out from Su Ming's body, and the strength of his physical body had increased exponentially!

Su Ming's physical body was incredibly powerful to begin with, and at that moment, it reached a level so powerful that it was terrifying. However, his right hand was even more frightening. It was the only part of him at that moment which could completely fuse with the Aura of Abyss and continuously absorb it!

If Su Ming's current physical body had reached a terrifyingly powerful extent, then if there was a need... his right hand could easily destroy enemies with this sort of physical body. As such, it could be seen just how powerful his right hand was after it absorbed the Aura of Abyss!

After all, his right hand came from his real physical body, and it could fuse perfectly with the Abyss Builders' inborn ability, thereby allowing the vast indescribable power of the Abyss Builders to erupt!

'The power of the Abyss Gate is not an inborn ability prepared to strengthen an Abyss Builder's physical body. It's true function is for us to create our own Abyssal World once we open the Abyss Gate!

'Strengthening the physical body is just a supplementary power... If I could seize my whole physical body back, then as I grew stronger, my physical body would become... imperishable!'

A brilliant light shown in Su Ming's eyes. During that moment, he suddenly lifted his head and stared at the spot where the tower belonging to the Immortals' Union was located.

The expression of the man who led the Immortals' Union from the tower distorted. Disbelief appeared in his eyes. He had just witnessed the two Grand Immortals in black

dying at Su Ming's hands. The shock brought by this scene caused his breathing to quicken.

The hearts of all the Immortals around the tower also trembled while they stared at Su Ming in shock. In fact, his battle against the two black-robed men had already affected the situation on the battlefield.

The roars from the War Chamber had grown much stronger. As they continued fighting, they forced back the cultivators from the Immortals' Union continuously.

When Su Ming cast his gaze at the tower, he redirected his gaze to the space behind it. Over there, a huge Rune swiftly appeared, and the light from it went in all directions. A low growl came from that Rune, and it was so loud that it stirred up a rumble that shook the entire galaxy. With a mighty pressure that felt like lightning, it descended on the galaxy before turning into a powerful wave of impact that swept outwards.

Countless cultivators fell back. Their expressions changed simultaneously, because they saw a scene that would be difficult for them to forget for the rest of their lives. A huge outline could be seen within the gigantic Rune. It was several thousands of feet tall, and it belonged to a giant. The person took a huge step forward, and when he walked out of the Rune, he threw his head back to roar.

There were seven stars shining at the center of his brows, and a savage, crazed presence spilled out from him without restraint. It was filled with violence and ferociousness. At the instant it filled the galaxy, he moved, and his body grew from thousands of feet tall to tens of thousands of feet.

When he raised his right hand, a greataxe appeared in it. Countless bolts of lightning swam around it. That lightning spread out and filled the entire area. Huge sparks that would require several grown men to surround them swept outwards, making the mighty pressure and presence spreading out from the giant to be unparalleled for a period of time.

After a short period of silence, all the cultivators from the Immortals' Union let out a strong cheer. As they cheered, they immediately moved back and cleared an empty spot in the galaxy. They crowded at the edges of the battlefield, their cheers shaking the entire galaxy.

"God!"

"God!!"

"GOD!!!"

All the cultivators from the Immortals' Union roared simultaneously, and their roars instantly filled the entire galaxy, causing all the cultivators from the War Chamber to turn

pale. In shock, they stared at the giant of tens of thousands feet tall, and only one word echoed in their hearts at that moment, the one word that the cultivators from the Immortals' Union had shouted!

God!

"You! Do you dare fight against me, a God?!"

With a greataxe in his hand and a contemptuous gaze, the Ancient God looked towards Su Ming. He lifted his left hand and beckoned him over.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1122: Saint Defier and Arid Triad - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1122: Saint Defier and Arid Triad

Chapter 1122: Saint Defier and Arid Triad

As the cultivators from the Immortals' Union spread out, the cultivators from the War Chamber also became intimidated by the powerful Ancient God. Under the orders of their commander Wild Dog, they gradually moved back and cleared an empty space.

This empty galaxy belonged to Su Ming and the Ancient God alone.

With an aloof expression on his face, Su Ming stared at the ten thousand feet tall Ancient God. He narrowed his eyes, and when he focused his gaze on the center of the giant's brows, he could vaguely tell based from the mighty pressure spreading out from the giant's body that he possessed power equivalent to the Almighty in Mastery Realm.

However, it was completely impossible to determine the combat abilities of those from Saint Defier based on their presence alone. After all, the two black-robed men did not even seem to have reached Mastery Realm. They appeared to be in Solar Kalpa Realm.

Yet with their offensive abilities, they could easily kill those in Mastery Realm, and even those in Fate Realm had to retreat when they saw them.

It was the same cultivation presence, but the difference between them was like the distance between heaven and earth. Su Ming would not have bothered if it was one person alone who showed this difference, but clearly, it was not something unique to a single individual. It was a fundamental difference between the cultivators of the 180 Expanse Cosmoses in Saint Defier and those in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos.

This was telling enough that when it came to the use of their cultivation bases, while the cultivators in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos might seem to have reached an incredibly powerful level, their strength was superficial. It was not the true power of cultivation.

‘Immortals categorize their levels of cultivation into the Second and Third Step... the black-robed man mentioned that I was near completion of the Third Step, and the power I showed then was equivalent to those in Life Realm. Based on this, could it be that this near completion of the Third Step is equivalent to the power of Life Realm in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos? But isn’t this a little too exaggerated? After all, while I can fight against those in Life Realm in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, it doesn’t mean that I could win against the people who are near completion of the Third Step in Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos!

‘Then what about Death Realm? Is it the so called great completion of the Third Step, or has it surpassed completion to reach another height in the cultivation system for the 180 Expanse Cosmoses of Saint Defier?

‘Then there’s the Sublime Paragons as well. I wonder what is their equivalent in Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos, and there’s also... Avacaniya!’

Su Ming’s eyes sparkled. He remembered the Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death he ran into the past. Some of them were strong, and some were weak. He also remembered how he had manifested all five fingers of his palm in Mastery Realm while there were far too many people who had only manifested one or two fingers.

‘I wonder... which Step do the two black-robed men belong to in Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos?’ As Su Ming’s eyes sparkled, he looked towards the ten thousand feet tall Ancient God.

“We can fight, but I want to know what level of cultivation do the two black-robed men I killed just now belong to in your world.”

“You want to know? If you can withstand one of my attacks, then you will have the right to know.”

The ten thousand feet tall Ancient God threw his head back and laughed. He took a swift step forward and instantly arrived in front of Su Ming. Then, he raised his left hand, and in the simplest manner, he threw a punch.

A brilliant light shone in Su Ming’s eyes, but he did not use his right hand, which was the strongest part of his body. Instead, he brought his left hand up and threw a punch forward. Once his fist collided against the Ancient God’s through space, a loud rumble that shook the entire universe resounded. Su Ming let out a muffled groan, and his body swayed. The Ancient God had also staggered a few steps back.

“Interesting. It’s rare to see a powerful warrior who has mastered the Essence energy of Expanse Cosmos in this barbaric place. No wonder the two hateful cultivators from the Celestial Realm couldn’t kill you. They didn’t die in vain!”

The ten thousand feet tall Ancient God laughed at the heavens, completely unbothered by the fact that he had been forced back a few steps due to the rebound. His voice reverberated in space, and there was a tone in it that spoke of his desire for an exciting fight.

“Those two Greatmasters from the Celestial Realm were at the peak of the Second Step in my homeland. They were half a step into the Third Step, and as for you, even if you’ve mastered the Essence energy of this Expanse Cosmos, you aren’t near the peak of the Third Step, as what they’ve said. This is also why I hate those cultivators from the Celestial Realm. Even if they die, they still want to trick other people. They only know how to scheme and plot against other people; they are not worthy of being known as warriors!

“Since you could withstand my attack, I will tell you a word of truth, the power you exuded is the exact same as the others with the same level of cultivation as you in my homeland.

“Your real level of cultivation is the Third Step’s Nirvana Void! As for the old monsters who are near the peak of the Third Step, they would need just one finger to kill cultivators like you a million times!”

The words of the Ancient God shook Su Ming’s heart. He had been wondering about his own level of cultivation previously and had speculated that the black-robed man had intentionally said those words with the goal of confusing him. Because of that, he would have a false impression of people’s relative power, and it could very likely become the cause of his death in the future!

When he heard the Ancient God’s words though, his head instantly became much clearer.

“How many Realms do you have for the Third Step in your homeland?” he asked again.

“If you can withstand my next attack, you will have the right to know that too.”

The Ancient God’s eyes were filled with fighting spirit. He took a step towards Su Ming once more. This time, when he lifted his right hand, he released the axe, and the seven stars at the center of his brows shone with a piercing light. A power that was several times stronger than before erupted with a bang from his body and was channeled to his right fist. With a fighting spirit to crush the universe, he charged towards Su Ming and threw a punch at him.

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. When he saw the Ancient God closing in on him with a monstrous presence, he did not move back. Instead, he went forward. He once again did not use his right hand. He stuck with his left hand, but he did not counter with a punch this time, as he had done previously. Instead, the instant the Ancient God's right fist closed in on him, he turned around and used his back to fight back against the attack. At the same time, he struck his chest with his left hand.

BOOM!

A deafening boom surged into the heavens, shaking the hearts of all the cultivators who witnessed this scene. All of them retreated with their expressions changing drastically.

Su Ming moved. When he turned around, his expression was the same as before. Not a single change could be detected. However, a jolt ran through the Ancient God's body. He coughed up a mouthful of blood and was forced back. Only when he was pushed thousands of feet back did he lift his head. A ferocious expression appeared on his face, but a hint of shock was hidden under it.

"The Essence of tremors!"

"You still haven't answered my question," Su Ming said flatly.

"Even though you clearly have the aura of the Third Step's Nirvana Void Realm and there are plenty of other people who have the same aura as you do, all of them are not worthy of being known as being in that Realm. But you... you have the power that matches to what those in this Realm should have. I understand the reason behind it now.

"Your physical body can match up to those of my tribe, and your level of cultivation can match up to that of the Immortals. It is equivalent to you possessing the Essence energy of this Expanse Cosmos, which is why you can bring forth the power that surpasses your own level of cultivation!

"You might be in Nirvana Void Realm, but you can bring forth power that is close to those in Spirit Void Realm." The Ancient God wiped off the blood at the corners of his mouth. When he looked towards Su Ming, the fighting spirit in his eyes became tainted with madness.

"I don't see any problem in me telling you all this. In my homeland, there are four Realms in the Third Step. Nirvana, Spirit, Arcane, Tribulant [1] which correspond to your Mastery, Fate, Life, and Death Realms, even if their names are different!

"However, it seems like this Expanse Cosmos' Death Realm is slightly strange. It isn't a complete equivalent to the Void Tribulant Realm." The Ancient God kept to his promise and answered without withholding a single secret.

Su Ming felt his heart tremble. A huge storm was raging at that moment in his head.

‘As expected, the Mastery, Fate, Life, and Death Realms correspond with the four Great Realms of the Third Step in Saint Defier. As for Death Realm... as the final Realm for the Mastery, Fate, Life, and Death Realms, it naturally has its own remarkable aspects!

‘But the Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death need to possess the offensive powers that truly match with these Realms before they can really be considered as Almighty. No wonder the people from Saint Defier call us barbarians.

‘It makes sense why all of them act so conceited and arrogant once they arrive here. In fact, when they kill Almighties, they even show very obvious glee. This is because when they are in their own Worlds, those who possess the presences of Almighties are all existences who make them tremble, and they have to bow down to worship them. But when they’re here, even though there are plenty of people who possess the same presence, it’s easy for them to kill them!

‘If that’s the case, then I can understand why I can bypass the levels of cultivation and kill Almighties. This isn’t because I’m powerful, but because they are weak!

‘Except for the small handful who truly possess combat abilities that match their levels of cultivation, most of the other Almighties in Mastery Realm are... only equivalent to those in the Second Step in Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos. In fact, it is the same for Fate Realm. This is why the black-robed men could kill those in Mastery Realm, but needed to be a little more serious when they came face to face with those in Fate Realm. In reality, those in Fate Realm who have not mastered this Expanse Cosmos’ Essence energy possess the same level of cultivation as they do. However, if the black-robed people use their strange divine abilities, they could still gain the upperhand.

‘And those in Life Realm who have yet to master the Essence energy of this Expanse Cosmos possess the same combat ability as I showed just now in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos. They are in truth in Nirvana Void Realm, and are very close to Spirit Void Realm, which is why these black-robed people did not dare provoke the Almighties in Life Realm within Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos.

“It’s all because they couldn’t win against them! They were only half a step into the Third Step and hadn’t yet become powerful warriors of Spirit Void Realm!

‘How many Almighties in the Third Step do the terrifying 180 Expanse Cosmoses of Saint Defier have? Right now, they have only sent those who have not reached the Third Step, and they are already so strong...’

Su Ming narrowed his eyes. He thought of his own level of cultivation. He originally thought that he was very powerful, but right then, he came to a realization that while he could call himself a powerful warrior in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, he would only be at

the bottom of the Third Step if he was placed in Saint Defier's camp. There were clearly quite a large number of old monsters above him, and they could easily kill him.

'But since that's the case, it'll be much easier to determine the levels of cultivation and the combat abilities of those cultivators from Saint Defier's camp. The Ancient God possesses the presence of those in Mastery Realm, so he's really in Mastery Realm, which is the Third Step's Spirit Void Realm for Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos. It is also the same as Life Realm of those who have not mastered the Essence energy of this Expanse Cosmos!

'He has the same level of cultivation as I do, but since he is an Ancient God, his offensive abilities are stronger... but he can't win against me in this battle because the power of my right hand can bring forth power that is practically above those in Life Realm who have not mastered this so-called Essence energy and are equivalent to those in the Third Step's Spirit Void Realm mentioned by the Ancient God!

'If I can think of all this, then the Ancient God must have figured it out a long time ago, which is why even if he had been forced back twice, he still dares to continue fighting against me...' A brilliant glare shone in Su Ming's eyes, and powerful fighting spirit rose in them.

"If you want to fight, then we will fight!"

At the instant fighting spirit surged in Su Ming's eyes, the ten thousand feet tall Ancient God tightened his grip over his greataxe and threw his head up to roar. His body grew tens of thousands of feet, and he took a step forward. The greataxe in his hand cut open the galaxy, and with a piercing whistle, he charged towards Su Ming.

Translator's Note:

1. Nirvana Void, Spirit Void, Arcane Void, and Void Tribulant: Mentioned in Renegade Immortal's Chapter 1275.

Chapter 1123: Replacement Plan

Both sides closed in on each other in an instant, and a shocking boom resounded. Su Ming's right hand crashed against the Ancient God's greataxe.

In the mid of the rumbles, Su Ming's body jolted, and he took three steps back. In the meantime, the Ancient God shuddered, and his greataxe shattered. He took around a dozen steps backwards in succession, ending up pushed back tens of thousands of feet.

“Haha! How enjoyable! Come, let’s do it again!”

The Ancient God threw his head back and roared. His body grew again, and as the seven stars at the center of his brows shone with a strong light, he charged towards Su Ming without any hesitation.

Far away from the battlefield was an empty space. No one noticed that there was a middle-aged man sitting there at that moment. He was dressed in a black robe. He had an apathetic expression, and not a single emotion could be detected on his face.

He sat there quietly, and his body looked as if it had fused together with the galaxy, causing all the others to be unable to tell the changes of aura in the place.

In fact, there was not a hint of life force on the middle-aged man. It was as if he was a puppet that sat there without moving. Only a dark light would occasionally flash in his eyes.

“I discovered Dao Kong. Should we execute the replacement plan?” he said as if mumbling to himself while staring at Su Ming fighting against the ten thousand feet tall Ancient God.

The instant he spoke, the dark light in his eyes flashed even more rapidly.

A gigantic pillar of light could be faintly seen connecting the heavens and the core of the Immortals’ Union. It was shrouded by a thick layer of fog which had appeared all of a sudden many years ago. Once in a while, a figure would shine in it after it descended.

At that moment, there were thousands of Immortals surrounding the pillar while meditating. Among them, there were three who were much closer than the others.

One of them was an incredibly beautiful woman dressed in white. She had an aloof expression, but once upon time, she had spoke gentle, loving words to Su Ming with the intention of confusing him with that same expression... She was Bai Feng, the Sacred Lady of Phoenix Sect!

Standing beside her was a black-robed man. His aura drifted about and surrounded him like wisps of smoke. It looked as if he did not fit into the universe, but he had still forced his way in and stayed.

His appearance was similar to the other black-robed people that Su Ming had met, but his level of cultivation surpassed them by a lot. He also had a mighty pressure which the other black-robed men did not possess. It had naturally formed after remaining in a high position for a long time.

There was another person beside him, which was an old man. He had a head full of white hair and was dressed in a long gray robe. He might have appeared old, but if Su

Ming was there, he would have definitely been able to tell at first glance that he looked incredibly similar to the Di Tian. However, by then, he had aged by a lot.

He was no longer dressed in an Emperor's robe, and neither did he have a crown on his head. However, when he stood there, he had an even greater and mightier pressure than the one spreading out from the black-robed man. He had a dignified face, and his gaze was so profound that the universe seemed to be contained in it.

At that moment, there were six scenes within the gigantic pillar of light before them. Three of them contained Dao Hua, Dao Lin, and Su Ming!

As for the other three, they showed three middle-aged men. They had unfamiliar faces, but based on the power spreading out from their bodies, all of them were incredibly powerful. Aside from Su Ming, the other five were currently with the armies of cultivators from Morning Dao Sect and were all engaged in a chaotic battle against the cultivators from the Immortals' Union.

Only Su Ming was fighting against the Ancient God.

"Three Dynasts who are known publicly to the world, and three Hidden Dynasts hiding in the shadows. Are these the six Dynasts of Morning Dao Sect?" The black-robed man spoke in a raspy voice. He sounded as if he was laughing, but it was filled with derision.

"Besides him, all the others are trash." The black-robed man raised his withered right hand and pointed at the pillar of light. Immediately, the scene belonging to Su Ming became clear and was shown to all of them.

"Once we control these six Dynasts, it'll be the same as controlling the entire Morning Dao Sect. Even if they are fakes released by Morning Dao Sect, it doesn't matter. At worst, we will only fail," Bai Ling said aloofly.

"Morning Dao Sect... Su Xuan, he's the one that stirs up great curiosity within me. What exactly is his goal? Is it his son's corpse? To turn the entire True Morning Dao World into a territory of the Abyss Builders? Or is he trying to stir up the war between Saint Defier and Dark Dawn?" The black-robed man shook his head.

"It's none of them. If he wanted the corpse, he could have taken it away many years ago before I descended. Turning this True World into the territory of the Abyss Builders... is not practical.

"As for stirring up the war... I'm very curious, if he's trying to stir it up, why did he make arrangements to destroy Dark Dawn's Relocation path so that only Saint Defier can descend right now?

“My old friend, forgive me for forgetting your name. I hope you don’t mind if I call you Sublime Paragon Di Tian.” When the black-robed man spoke in that raspy voice of his, he turned his head around to cast a glance at the old Di Tian in gray robes.

“It isn’t a bad name,” Di Tian said faintly.

“Then since Su Xuan Yi was your old friend and a remnant of the Abyss Builders who had married a woman of Dark Dawn and who along with his people belonged to Dark Dawn’s camp, what exactly is his goal? I’ve been wondering about it for a long time, and I still don’t understand him. He allowed us to descend at will previously, yet now he launched a full counterattack?” The black-robed man frowned.

“And is that Dynast Dao Kong who seized control over the fifth kiln Su Xuan Yi’s descendant?”

“The Predecessor of Dao Ocean told me that he isn’t. As for what Su Xuan Yi thinks... He’s a lunatic. I might have fought against him for most of my life, but it’s still difficult for me to speculate what a lunatic thinks. In the end though, it’s all to make the Abyss Builders raise to power.” Di Tian could only shake his head.

“Since the Predecessor of Dao Ocean said this... then that Dao Kong is a fake that Su Xuan Yi sent out to make us pay attention to him while he protects his real son.

“No wonder then that everything that Dao Kong did in Morning Dao Secs provoked so much discussion.” The black-robed man shook his head.

“Are Su Xuan Yi’s thoughts on the matter really that important? If Saint Defier sends down a Great Heavenly Sovereign[1], everything will be solved,” Bai Feng said flatly.

“Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos’ barrier isn’t that easily broken. We’ve been invading and making preparations for many years, but the strongest people we can send are still only Almighties in Void Tribulant Realm.

“But if you can occupy the entire True World, you will greatly reduce the difficulty for those from Saint Defier descending into the land. In fact, the three Paragons of Saint Defier, those three supreme existences, are also quite interested in descending to this place.” The black-robed man smiled faintly.

“Alright, since it’s decided that Dao Kong isn’t Su Xuan Yi’s son and not an Abyss Builder, we will replace him along with everyone else, but our main focus will still be on him. I’m very interested in this person.” The black-robed man swung his arm, and Su Ming’s picture in the pillar of light became a mere illusion again.

“The physical body of Su Xuan Yi’s son is lacking an arm right now. I’ve already gathered all of the materials you asked of me for our promise. When... will you help me change my Life?

"If I can become an Abyss Builder, Saint Defier's plans will go even more smoothly," Di Tian lifted his head and stared at the black-robed man while speaking calmly.

"It's a pity that the person I first chose was Sang. He was even more compatible with that physical body. But as a former Sublime Paragon, you have the right. The one descending three months later will be an Almighty of Saint Defier. His name is Xing Ji Dao, and he has the same status as I do. We are both Greatmasters of the Celestial Realm's Eight Paramount Daos.

"He will bring the supreme treasure that the three Paragons of Saint Defier had been merging for tens of thousands of years, and with the preparations you made previously, we will have a five-tenths of a chance to succeed in helping you change your Life so you would become an Abyss Builder!

"But you must also be prepared to fail," the black-robed man said faintly. With a single move, he walked into the pillar of light, and once he sat down, he remained still and unmoving.

Bai Feng's eyes shone. She lifted her pale hand and formed a seal to point at the pillar of light. Immediately, the six pictures within it shone with a dazzling light. When they surrounded the black-robed man, the eyes of a cultivator from Morning Dao Sect in the picture with Dao Hua shone before he collapsed to turn into a layer of fog that spread through the area. It caused chaos, and Dao Hua shuddered,. A strange glare appeared in his eyes.

Similar scenes appeared in the other pictures as well. Dao Lin and the three Hidden Dynasts faced all sorts of accidents in succession, and it was difficult for other people to notice that someone else seemed to have replaced them, because they instantly returned to normal.

No one in their surroundings knew that they... were no longer themselves. The unexpected change was so quick that they had been replaced in a manner akin to Possession, and the Flourishing Lotuses on their bodies didn't even have time to activate their protection.

The only picture in which nothing had happened was where Su Ming was fighting against the Ancient God. When it had come to the black-robed man, he hesitated for a moment.

"If an Ancient God dies in battle, there will definitely be Immortal Paragons who will communicate with the Ancient Paragons in Saint Defier. I'm far away in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, and there are plenty of things that I can no take care of all by myself. After all, when the cultivators in the Celestial Realm died, the only thing the Ancient Gods do is to stand by and watch, no?" the black-robed man mumbled, then raised his right hand to point at the Ancient God in the picture.

At the same time, a dark light shone in the eyes of the person who had an apathetic expression while he sat and meditated in the battlefield between the War Chamber and the Immortals' Union. His body disappeared into nothingness.

Soon after, when Su Ming crashed against the Ancient God, a loud rumbled resounded. The Ancient God coughed up a mouthful of blood. When he sent Su Ming backwards with the force from the clash, his body too moved back. However, an even greater fighting intent erupted in his eyes. He roared, but just as he was about to take a step forward, his body suddenly lurched forward as if there was a strange divine ability which had descended on his body in an unseen manner.

As he trembled, a bang rang out at the center of his brows. One, two, three... When all seven stars shattered, they turned into a destructive, explosive power. At the instant fear and anger appeared in his eyes, the seven-starred Ancient God... self-destructed!

Translator's Note:

1. Great Heavenly Sovereign: Mentioned in Renegade Immortal chapter 1640.

Chapter 1124: Under Space and Beyond the Universe

"Damn it! Ode of the War Chamber!"

The instant the seven stars of the Ancient God crumbled one after another. A destructive force emerged from it, and it was increasing exponentially in an indescribably fast manner.

An anxious and frenzied howl came from the War Chamber's planet. The middle-aged man named Wild Dog rushed out swiftly. As he shouted, he extended his arms, and at the instant all his power erupted from his body violently, dozens of figures dressed in armor immediately appeared beside him. All of them immediately began sending their cultivation base outwards.

In fact, at that moment, even though the millions of cultivators from the War Chamber did not know what was going on, their instinctive reaction towards the command to execute the Ode of the War Chamber had made them immediately bring out their entire cultivation base without any hesitation.

This was the War Chamber. It acted like the armor and the sharp blade of Morning Dao Sect!

It was precisely because of their nature which resembled that of an army that they had the power of their cultivation bases reach its peak as they brought it out at that moment. When their cultivation bases erupted from their bodies, Runes appeared under their feet. Hundreds of cultivators gathered together to form a gigantic Rune, and at the instant it appeared, the Ancient God exploded.

A loud bang shot up. The power of the explosion brought forth by all the stars at the center of his brows shattering could destroy everything. The moment the Rune formed by the cultivators of the War Chamber began Relocating, they were attacked by the destructive power, and in an instant, half of them died. However... the remaining half of the cultivators of the War Chamber had Relocated and left the area!

Since the War Chamber was an existence akin to an army, they had a uniform order. Every single one of their thoughts was formed around their commander, which was why there was not a single flaw in their reaction time, but it was different for the Immortals' Union.

They were a union and thus formed by various races merging together. They might have a commander, and while no weaknesses could be seen on usual days and they possessed powerful offensive abilities while fighting against Morning Dao Sect, but during critical moments when life and death could be determined in an instant, a unified will and a uniform mind was something that they lacked. That was why... they could not escape from area of the seven-starred Ancient God's explosion in such a short period of time.

When the seven-starred Ancient God exploded, a loud bang had surged into the skies and spread through the area. Everything on the side of the Immortals' Union, no matter if they were cultivators or even the tower, shattered at that instant. The people did not scream, and neither did they struggle. Everything... was reduced to ashes in an instant.

Su Ming stood in the spot where the explosion was the strongest. A powerful life-threatening sense of danger instantly surged through his body and heart. This feeling was something he hadn't experienced in a long time. His pupils shrank, and he raised his right hand swiftly. At the same time, the Ecang in him spread out its presence to cover everything about him.

The Immortals watched this scene through the picture provided in the pillar of light. At the instant they thought Su Ming was going to fight back, a black soul thread that no one else could see fused with the destructive power, and at the moment it charged towards Su Ming...

He did something that immediately caused these people's expressions to change.

Su Ming did not act as they thought he would and fought against the destructive power caused by the seven-starred Ancient God. Instead, at the instant the destructive power came swiftly towards him, he gathered all his power in his right hand and threw a fist at

the space behind him. As his power erupted forth, the third eye at the center of his brows flashed and magnified the place.

Su Ming's fist landed on the weakest spot in space, tearing it apart, and it looked just like a piece of paper which had a hole torn right through it. Su Ming moved, and the instant the destructive power came charging towards him, he stepped into the crack in space and left into the distance.

This was definitely not something an ordinary cultivator could think of. In fact, some of the cultivators who had even higher levels of cultivation than he would find it hard to instantly think of this method. Only those who had an incredibly vast pool of experiences and had went through many unique challenges would be able to think of it!

The inspiration behind Su Ming action was the taming of the Resentful Wei when he was in Divine Essence Star Ocean. The Relocation spots he'd went into there looked as if they had sunken into space itself, and his travels in the strange world under space were behind him coming up with such a method.

Beneath space was another world. It contained countless unknown entities, and it was a place that seemed to be placed beyond the universe!

A loud boom shot into space. When Su Ming fled into the crack in space and entered the unknown area beyond the universe, the destructive power came charging towards the spot where he previously was, causing the crack in space to continue growing, and the area inside was immediately filled with chaos.

At the same time, the soul thread intending to replace Su Ming instantly crawled into the world in the crack to chase after Su Ming.

During that moment, Bai Feng's eyes sparkled while she sat beyond the pillar of light at the core of the Immortals' Union. Di Tian frowned slightly. The black-robed man in the pillar of light was momentarily stunned before a brilliant light shone in his eyes.

"An interesting lad. I didn't expect that he would think of this method. But... the world in the crack in space and beyond the universe is a region so dangerous that not even I would dare step into it carelessly.

"It is a chaotic world, and there are no lives in it. There is only a boundless, chaotic ocean which will crush all forms of will and life.

"It's a pity for that soul thread of mine. It is one which has inherited a part of my memories. Oh well, since it has already went after him and my connection to it has been broken due to that chaotic ocean, there's no need for me to pay any more attention to it.

"It's impossible for Dao Kong to continue living in there. He's already a dead man." The black-robed man shook his head and walked out of the pillar of light. With a swing of his arm, the picture which belonged to Su Ming shattered and disappeared.

The spot where the War Chamber and the cultivators in the Immortals' Union previously fought was empty. Not a single person was left behind. All those from the Immortals' Union had died, and half of the War Chamber had been Relocated. There was only a swiftly contracting crack in space. As it closed up and healed, the battle in the area came to a close.

Su Ming disappeared.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor, Zhu You Cai, the Abyss Dragon, and even the bald crane were not beside him. While by himself, he disappeared in the galaxy upon entering the unfamiliar world within space.

It was a place in which cultivators fell almost every year. However, over the course of countless years, no one had ever managed to walk out from it. All forms of lives in the universe who had fallen under space due to various reasons had died quietly there.

"Damn it, damn it... Darn it all, I hate those Ancient Gods the most! But... but it shouldn't have self-destructed so easily. It shouldn't self-destruct at all, much less by having all seven stars shatter!"

A layer of distortions appeared in the empty galaxy, and the bald crane showed up. There was anxiety on its face as it stared at the spot where Su Ming had disappeared. Soon though, it was replaced by madness.

"The area under space and beyond the universe is dangerous... very dangerous... DARN IT ALL!" The bald crane gritted its teeth and fused into space. With its divine abilities, it could enter the strange world under space and beyond the universe even without any cracks in space.

"Damn it, why is my life so difficult? I don't want to go to this place again, I don't want to... Huh? Have I have come to this place before?"

The bald crane was momentarily stunned, but when it entered the world under space and beyond the universe, and indescribable wave of air surged towards it with a bang, tearing apart its body in countless pieces before sweeping them away and disappearing.

After some time, those pieces merged together to turn into the bald crane once more. It cursed loudly and started searching the area.

Before it was a colorful world, and it shone with all sorts of lights. The light rays intersected with each other and acted like the waves of an ocean. They howled and

charged forward constantly in this boundless world while they were swept up by balls of air that could rip apart all existences.

The air could sweep up light. This was something that the air in the world outside could not do so wantonly. In fact, it was completely impossible, because light was light. It had no form, and air could be detected. These were two completely different materials, and it was completely impossible for one of them to sweep up the other.

Yet in here, in this seemingly lawless world under space and beyond the universe, everything was possible.

This was the ocean of light. And it was full of various forms of light. When they fused together, they turned into an ocean, and the ball of air stirred up the power which destroyed everything. With that, it filled this world with destruction.

Su Ming coughed up blood. Waves of pain as if he was being torn apart shot up his body. Several days had passed since he had appeared in the strange world and was swept into the ocean of light.

Several days ago, to avoid the explosive power that destroyed the seven-starred Ancient God, he had torn open a crack in space and stepped inside. It had allowed him to avoid the destructive strike, but it had forced him through another form of destruction in the world under space and beyond the universe.

In fact, the moment Su Ming stepped into that world, he had a strange feeling that the universe was a shell, a gigantic shell, and the world under space and beyond the universe was the area outside the shell.

If he looked at it in this manner, the entire universe in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos could be treated as a huge egg, and the place where Su Ming was located at that moment was the area beyond the eggshell.

The endless light there formed an ocean. The boundless air formed gusts of wind that could not be detected. They swept up the ocean of light and turned it into a brilliant, dazzling scene that could destroy everything.

There were countless rays of light. In fact, Su Ming had even seen the Light of Extreme Darkness among them!

His physical body had long since been torn apart and no longer existed. At that moment, the ocean of light had swept up his Nascent Divinity and his right hand. It alone still retained its physical form and could not be torn apart by the air.

In fact, if there was someone else in the place, they would have been able to see a gate exuding dense waves of Aura of Abyss in Su Ming's Nascent Divinity. They could even see a fragment that had mostly recovered in within it.

There were countless runic symbols flashing on that fragment, and it was... the Seed of Life Extermination!

Chapter 1125: Extermination, Parasitical

The ocean of light swept Su Ming up. In the mid of the intense pain caused by having his physical body shredded, Su Ming was continuously swept about in the boundless world under space and beyond the universe.

The destruction of his physical body and the destruction of his Nascent Divinity brought an intense pain that almost numbed Su Ming. If it was not because of the Abyss Gate in his body continuously releasing the Aura of Abyss to nourish and heal his Nascent Divinity, his body and soul would have been destroyed a long time ago.

It was quiet around him. The ocean of light moved about without any sound. There was only light, endless light.

In the silence, Su Ming continuously sensed the existence of the Abyss Gate and the Seed of Life Extermination in his body. He could only use this method to divert his attention, because while there were strong and weak lights around him, even the weakest one could cause damage his Nascent Divinity.

Thankfully, the pain did not come to him occasionally but was a constant presence. It numbed him. Since he was in extreme pain which had no comparison all the time, he forgot how it felt to not be in pain. This made it so that he no longer registered pain..

But Su Ming did not give up. He still retained a clear mind, because he believed that the bald crane would come save him. He believed in this firmly.

The bald crane had an unknown origin... and because of it, it could move through space to come to this place.

Back then, there had been no other method for Su Ming to avoid the attack from the seven-starred Ancient God. Even though his physical body was incredibly powerful, it would still have been impossible for him to fight against the explosive power that came from the seven-starred Ancient God when all seven of his stars as well as his body, life, Brands, and even his soul were destroyed.

Perhaps the fifth kiln could allow him to withstand that blow, but summoning it required time, and the Ancient God's self-destruction was extremely sudden. There was simply not enough time for Su Ming to make too many preparations.

In fact, even the power to reverse time could not be used because during that moment, the explosive power from the Ancient God's self-destruction was too great. Su Ming might not have executed his ability, but at that instant, he'd known clearly that it was impossible for him to reverse time.

He could either have his body and soul destroyed by that explosion or step into the dangerous world under space, and Su Ming chose the latter.

At that moment, he floated in the ocean of light and was swept forward by the waves. He had no idea how much time had passed or how far he had traveled. To keep his mind clear and so that he would not be in a continuous state of unconsciousness, he kept his full attention on the Abyss Gate and the Seed of Life Extermination. Besides these two things, he had nothing else to pay attention to.

This was not the first time he examined the Seed of Life Extermination, but it was definitely the first time that he observed, experienced, and sensed it with such rapt attention.

He noticed that the fragment Xiao Hong had given him in the past, the Seed of Life Extermination which had fused with his Nascent Divinity many years ago so that they could no longer be differentiated from each other, had been nourished by his soul and everything that he had experienced over the course of the numerous years he had lived. Through it all, it had grown a lot at its edges.

It looked like a statue which had grown to almost half of its full size. With just a little more, it would be half of a statue.

It could be vaguely seen that the statue was an ancient ship.

However, for some unknown reason, as Su Ming continued observing the Seed of Life Extermination, he suddenly had a very strange feeling. This feeling came from the recovery speed of the Seed of Life Extermination. It seemed to have become much slower compared to the first time he had observed it.

He would usually spend quite a lot of time observing the Seed of Life Extermination, but at that moment, he had a feeling that the Seed of Life Extermination could not reach a complete state.

Judging by its recovery speed, soon, half of the statue would be recovered, and then, it would no longer continue growing.

It was as if... even if it had already fused perfectly with Su Ming's Nascent Divinity, it would reach its limit once it grew to half of its full state.

This was the first time this guess appeared in Su Ming's head. It caused him to fall silent and sink into contemplation.

‘Could it be that there’s something lacking so the Seed of Life Extermination can’t continue to grow?’

Su Ming could not find the answer. As he stayed in pensive silence, he cast all his attention on the Seed of Life Extermination again. While he observed this thing which seemed to be living in his Nascent Divinity as a parasitical existence, he suddenly saw veins stretching from the Seed of Life Extermination into his Nascent Divinity.

Those veins only appeared for an instant before disappearing. However, their sudden existence just then had caused Su Ming’s heart to tremble.

This was the first time he’d seen such a bizarre scene. The veins were like a net when they spread out from the Seed of Life Extermination. They might have appeared only for an instant, but a chill went down Su Ming’s spine. His first thought was that it was... a spider!

The Seed of Life Extermination was like a spider. It formed countless venous paths that stretched into his Nascent Divinity to form a huge net!

Su Ming forgot the intense pain from his Nascent Divinity being continuously torn apart and disregarded the feeling of the Abyss Gate ceaselessly healing it. All of his attention was placed on the Seed of Life Extermination.

‘Something’s not right...’

But no matter how Su Ming continued observing it, he could no longer see the veins. It was as if everything which he’d seen moments ago were just an illusion. However, Su Ming was certain that even with the intense pain he suffered, what he saw was definitely not an illusion.

After all, he was the Progenitor of controlling all illusions. He had that much confidence in himself.

‘Then for what reason could I see it before but can’t see it now...’

Su Ming’s eyes sparkled. Suddenly, they focused, and he slowly turned his head around to look at the colorful lights around him. As the colors intersected with each other, they formed countless rays of differing varieties.

“It’s light! That’s right. It’s the light here. When a certain type of light shines on my body, it can show me things I would usually be unable to see!” With a trembling heart, Su Ming immediately recalled what sort of light had appeared around him when the veins had showed up.

However, this was clearly an incredibly difficult thing. The lights around him were a constant. It was impossible to say which specific one had shined on him at a certain point of time.

Determination appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He had to understand just what was going on with the Seed of Life Extermination, because this might possibly be a secret that he would otherwise not discover his entire life. If he had not stepped into this place due to a stroke of luck, it would have been impossible for him to find out why the Seed of Life Extermination had caused his skin to crawl with what he saw even though it had fused with his Nascent Divinity!

A glint appeared in his eyes. As his Nascent Divinity continued being swept away by the ocean of light in the passage of frozen time, he moved. With it, the sensation of being torn apart became several times stronger. It made his Nascent Divinity tremble. If it was not because of the Abyss Gate sending out a large amount of Aura of Abyss, he might have immediately been torn into shreds.

Yet even this pain was unable to make Su Ming give up on his idea. His Nascent Divinity immediately started swimming about in the ocean of light. He endured the pain and pushed down the desire to roar at the sky to vent his pain since he had to keep all of his attention on the Seed of Life Extermination. If he went on to vent his suffering, his will would lax, and he would be unable to pay attention to the Seed of Life Extermination.

His Nascent Divinity continued swimming about, trying to have different rays of light shine on it. Time trickled by. After the time it takes for an incense stick to burn, Su Ming's Nascent Divinity had become incredibly weakened under the torture of the intense pain of being ripped apart, but at that instant, flashes of red and white swept past him.

Su Ming's Nascent Divinity shuddered. He saw the veins all around the Seed of Life Extermination which had spread from the fragment to all of his Nascent Divinity!

At the same time, he continued moving, chasing after the red-white light so the veins from the Seed of Life Extermination in his Nascent Divinity would remain clear in his sight. Gradually, a brilliant light shone in his eyes. He saw that the veins were black and that the Seed of Life Extermination had not fused with his Nascent Divinity as he had previously believed...

It was...

'A parasite!'

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

He was an Abyss Builder, and his understanding towards parasites and Possession was much greater than that of the others. With just one glance, he could tell that the Seed of Life Extermination had formed a very clear parasitic relationship with his Nascent Divinity.

Su Ming sank into silence. It was not that he could not accept the fact that he had become the host for a parasite, but that it was a lot different from what he had previously thought. As he pondered over this, a crack suddenly appeared at the center of his Nascent Divinity's brows. His third eye pushed through, and when it stared at those veins, they were instantly enlarged endlessly in Su Ming's vision.

When they were enlarged by an unknown amount of times, he saw a scene which caused a hint of ferociousness and disbelief to appear on his face.

He saw countless centipede-like threads on each vein once they had been enlarged endlessly. They had fused with his Nascent Divinity and were continuously tearing away pieces of it. Once they managed to take one, they would begin devouring it madly.

Devouring the blood of those from Saint Defier might have aided the Seed of Life Extermination's recovery and growth, but the greater reason for it was the amount of nourishment it had taken from Su Ming's Nascent Divinity.

The destruction of the Nascent Divinity could not be seen with the naked eye and could not be discovered with divine senses, but the damage was done constantly. In fact, Su Ming could immediately tell with his level of cultivation that if this process continued for another five hundred years, then even if he raised his level of cultivation, his Nascent Divinity would have irreparable damage.

If fact, if a whole thousand years went by, then no matter what sort of level of cultivation Su Ming possessed, he would still be unable to prevent his Nascent Divinity's death!

Since Seed of Life Extermination was a parasitic existence which suffered no backlash from his Nascent Divinity, it was a one-sided process of the fragment devouring him. In truth, it had responded to Su Ming's call to save him every single time because... it was a parasite protecting its host. It had yet to complete its growth, which was why it had to protect its host's life.

Anguish appeared on Su Ming's face, and he no longer chased after the red-white light. The veins in his Nascent Divinity about the Seed of Life Extermination soon disappeared and everything returned to normal. If he had not experienced the come to this place, then it was likely that he would have only come to know at the moment of his death that the one who snatched away his Nascent Divinity and destroyed him was the Seed of Life Extermination.

Chapter 1126: This Art is Ocean Remover!

“Perhaps even he doesn’t know about this,” Su Ming mumbled. “Perhaps this is just a misunderstanding. Perhaps these are just guesses and this is how the Seed of Life Extermination grows. Once it becomes complete, everything will change. It must be.”

Su Ming fell silent, and he suppressed the anguish and doubts in his heart.

As he remained silent, the pain from his Nascent Divinity continued attacking his senses. Su Ming was forced to shift his attention to his Nascent Divinity again. This time, he did not look at the Seed of Life Extermination, but intentionally ignored it. He did not want to continue thinking too deeply about this problem, so he chose to observe the only other thing he could.

The Abyss Gate, which had devoured a large amount of Su Ming’s life force, countless cultivators, and even planets had began nourishing Su Ming in the world with the ocean of light, thereby allowing his Nascent Divinity to become an imperishable existence.

Su Ming stared at the Abyss Gate formed by crystallization. It gave off a feeling that it was very feeble, that it could be crushed with the slightest squeeze.

It was just like a door which belonged to a poor man’s house in the mortal world. There was a huge difference between it and the doors of those with illustrious statuses or the royal family.

It was not a difference in growth, but a difference in foundation.

Su Ming stared at his rather shoddy Abyss Gate quietly.

As time passed, he averted his gaze and stared at the ocean of light around him. He could not move his body, because the moment he did so, intense pain which was thousands of times stronger than before would course through his body. He had also noticed that the Aura of Abyss spreading out from his Abyss Gate was gradually lessening.

Once it stopped, his Nascent Divinity would stop healing. At that time, what would await him would be his Nascent Divinity being instantly crushed.

And if he moved, he would just speed up the release rate of his Aura of Abyss and shorten the time till his death.

‘Perhaps... I will really need to stay here for eternity. Baldy, you’re late...’

Su Ming believed that the bald crane would come, but perhaps it had gone off to another direction in the vast ocean of light.

But even at that moment, Su Ming did not fear death. He only felt slightly regretful. He regretted that he did not manage to save Yu Xuan, find his senior brothers, and fulfill his wish of creating a home for himself.

These regrets turned into a sigh. As he lay in the ocean of light, he overlooked the amount of Aura of Abyss spreading out from his body and ignored the signs of death because he suddenly realized that the light around him... was actually very beautiful.

This sort of beautiful sight could not be seen in the universe. It could only be seen in this place, and it was an indescribable beauty formed by an innumerable number of light rays.

He paid no heed to what would happen after he died and just watched the lights, admiring the beauty which would become the last thing he saw in his life when his Nascent Divinity vanished.

As he continued watching, Su Ming forgot his current condition. He felt as if he had become a part of the endless light and as if they had fused together. He swam about in the world without restraint.

"This ocean is formed by light which can be seen and wind which can be detected..." Su Ming mumbled. He ignored his imminent death and immersed himself in the strange feeling.

While within it, he felt like he had returned to the past, when he was in the land of Berserkers and gained his epiphany to clear his mind in the ninth summit. During it, he had understood how to clear his mind with drawing and what it meant to have changes of heart.

This time, as he watched the light, he was immersed in a situation akin to gaining an epiphany. However, he was not in a trance as he went through a change of heart. Instead, he was in a trance because of the ocean of light's magnificence and beauty.

Perhaps only when a person was about to die yet completely forgot its shadow looming over their heads would they be able to observe the beauty of this light so wholeheartedly.

Maybe because Su Ming knew that he would not be able to watch it for much longer, he valued what little time he had.

Time trickled by. As the ocean of light moved about, Su Ming was swept even further away, and he saw more light rays. There was no end to them, and his body was surrounded by light.

He did not notice though that the Aura of Abyss spreading out from his body had become thinner and that it seemed like before long there would be no more Aura of Abyss left to nourish his body.

And his Nascent Divinity was being torn apart even more violently while he was swept about in the ocean of light.

“What a strange light. Once it fuses with the wind, it forms an ocean, and it possesses the power that can destroy everything...” As Su Ming mumbled under his breath, he saw a flash of black among the many lights. He was familiar with it, for it was the Light of Extreme Darkness.

“Then... how was the light formed?”

Su Ming had forgotten that he currently existed only as a Nascent Divinity and was immersed in the strange condition. He stared at the endless light around him with the question in his mind.

He wanted to know the answer, to learn how the light appeared and understand why there were countless variations of it, how it formed the ocean, and how it possessed such an astonishing power which could destroy everything in the world.

Before he came into contact with the Light of Extreme Darkness, Su Ming had not believed that light was a form of energy. It was something which could be seen and was indispensable in the galaxy. However, the Light of Extreme Darkness he encountered in Morning Dao Sect's Striking Lands had overturned his thoughts. He gradually came to accept... that light was a form of energy.

While he disregarded the problem of his upcoming death, Su Ming had a feeling like he had turned into light. The brightness of the Light of Extreme Darkness among the countless rays of light seemed to have taken away all what remained of his will in the Nascent Divinity, causing Su Ming to feel... as if he had become a part of the light beyond the universe.

He felt like the Light of Extreme Darkness, and he swam about all sorts of other lights. As he continued thinking, he felt like the rays of light were continuously being magnified. He had done it to the limit of his third eye, and what he saw... was no longer light.

Instead, there was nothingness surrounding two huge runic symbols. They were not drawn by man, but seemed to have been born naturally beyond the universe. They also only looked like runic symbols, but were not. Their complexity was definitely not something that cultivators could create or copy.

Su Ming saw the two symbols crash against each other before fusing together. The fusion rate was perfect, and once they become one, he saw that their complexity had increased even more. It was as if the runic symbols Su Ming had seen just then were

just a Brand of a lowest grade, and once they fused together, they rapidly rose to a higher level.

As the runic symbol evolved from a lower to a higher form of existence, threads of power that Su Ming could not see but could feel and which terrified him rushed out from the void. They fused into the runic symbols like they were the nourishment the symbols needed during their process of moving from a lower to a higher form of existence.

When the transformation of the runic symbol reached its peak and its absorption of the power seemed to have reached a boundless state, Su Ming suddenly saw that the runic symbol—now so complicated that it was impossible to describe it with words—experience a reversion. It no longer continued improving, but instead started changing from a higher to a lower form of existence.

During the transformation, there was no longer any power from the void fusing into the runic symbol. When it changed from a higher to a lower form of existence, an indescribable, terrifying power was released from within it.

As it was released... light appeared!

When Su Ming saw this, his heart started trembling furiously. He had a vague feeling that he seemed to have understood something, but the simplicity in this complexity was always a hair's breadth away from giving him an epiphany. He lacked something to connect all of it to himself.

'Breathing! It's breathing!'

Su Ming's mind trembled. During that instant, he found the connection—it was breathing. The feeling he had from the scene he'd just watched was similar to one of his own breathing.

First was inhalation. This action was the runic symbols absorbing a large amount of power from the space around it to transform into a higher form of existence. When it reached the peak, it exhaled, and it was the same as releasing the power from the void which it had absorbed. Then... light would be formed!

At the instant Su Ming came to understand this, a loud roar rang out in his mind. His Abyss Gate no longer released the Aura of Abyss, and his Nascent Divinity was about to be torn apart by the ocean of light.

Yet during that moment, Su Ming closed his eyes and sucked in a deep breath of the light. His Nascent Divinity came to a swift halt, and the instant Su Ming exhaled, his Nascent Divinity swiftly started recovering. Strong rays of light also swiftly spread out from it.

His Nascent Divinity shuddered. His eyes flew open, and understanding appeared in them.

‘There isn’t any wind here! The light formed this ocean because it is a type of energy, and it looked like it was being moved because it was being released. This released light is thus strong enough to destroy everything!’

‘Light... This is light!’

The light from Su Ming’s Nascent Divinity reached one hundred thousand feet. He moved slightly in the ocean of light and fused completely with the light around him.

Dazzling light shone in his eyes. He sucked in a deep breath, and loud rumbles immediately spread out from his Nascent Divinity. Two faint balls of light appeared within him, and in them were the two complicated runic symbols Su Ming had seen earlier. As he breathed in, they fused together in his body.

Immediately after, a large amount of power from the void turned into the air that he sucked in, causing the fusion of the runic symbols in his body to jump from a lower to a higher form of existence before they swiftly reversed and released a powerful light.

Su Ming’s breathing became more rapid. The light from the runic symbols in his body became stronger as they ceaselessly moved from a lower to higher form of existence before reversing. The light spread out to one thousand, ten thousand, one hundred thousand feet... After a short span of a dozen breaths, Su Ming threw his head back and roared. The light in his body had already reached hundreds of thousands of feet in all directions.

During that instant, Su Ming was the ocean of light. The light he released had already become an ocean. From within it, all the other rays of light were chased away, and only Su Ming’s light remained. It was... the Light of Extreme Darkness!

“This Art is what appears after Mountain Shifter, and it will be known as Ocean Remover [1]!”

At the instant Su Ming’s voice reverberated in the air, he leapt up. From the distance, it looked as if an ocean of light had risen, and with a vast presence, it shook the whole world!

When Su Ming rose to the heavens with the ocean of light, he pushed down fiercely. The space roared, and a rarely seen sight of a loud roar breaking the silence in the world in the ocean of light could be seen!

Translator’s Note:

Mountain Shifter and Ocean Remover: This is so much of a genius it has to be mentioned. It's actually an idiom known as 移山倒海 (yí shān dǎo hǎi), literally meaning to move mountains and seas, and the real meaning is humans changing nature.

Chapter 1127: Essence of Light!

'Light of Extreme Darkness. Right now, I am the Light of Extreme Darkness. I wonder if I can be considered to have reached the fulfillment of the Light of Extreme Darkness?'

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. His body turned into endless light and formed the ocean of light. When booming sounds spread out in all directions and the light disappeared, all the Light of Extreme Darkness swiftly shrank to form a single figure.

It had fluttering black hair, a dazzling black robe, and a profound dark light shining in its black eyes. Naturally, it was Su Ming.

He stood alone in the ocean of light. At that moment, he was a part of the ocean and no longer felt any hint of himself being torn apart. Instead, he had a feeling like he had the power to move the universe with just a flip of his hand.

'I haven't reached fulfillment yet. As the saying goes, birds of a feather flock together. If I had reached fulfillment, then when I sent out this Light of Extreme Darkness, the Light of Extreme Darkness born from the ocean of light would have come to me as well.

'Light of Extreme Darkness... The word extreme shows its domineering nature, and it will belong solely to me if I reach fulfillment in cultivating it!'

Su Ming's eyes sparkled. After a moment, determination appeared in his eyes. He closed them, and when he stretched out his arms, the two runic symbols in his body fused together and released their energy. The black Light of Extreme Darkness instantly erupted from Su Ming's body.

This time, he did not even try to intentionally stop it. He did not think about his own limits. He wanted to release all the Light of Extreme Darkness which could be produced in his body, and he wanted to release it to its limits!

These thoughts seemed to stir up his Light of Extreme Darkness and form a strange sort of unity with it. Immediately, the Light of Extreme Darkness spreading out from Su Ming's body erupted and spread out at an indescribable speed.

Ten thousand, one hundred thousand, three hundred thousand, around one million feet, and eventually, millions of feet. If anyone cast their gaze across the area, they would find that all the light around Su Ming had been chased off. The only thing remaining was a ball of extreme black. Only the Light of Extreme Darkness was left!

Even when the light had spread out to this extent, Su Ming did not intend to stop. He could sense that he had yet to reach his limit and that he had not reached the extent which he expected.

His intentions were very simple. There were countless differing rays of light in the world, but he had chosen to become the Light of Extreme Darkness. And since he did so, he would become the only Light of Extreme Darkness in the universe!

The one and only!

The light from Su Ming's body was still spreading out in all directions. In the blink of an eye, it covered an area that was nearly ten million feet in diameter. As time passed, it surpassed this area and continued spreading boundlessly until Su Ming finally sensed his limits.

However, he still chose not to give up, because he sensed that he had yet to become the only Light of Extreme Darkness. That was why even if he had reached his limits, the two runic symbols in his body continued absorbing and releasing power.

When Su Ming reached the point when he no longer knew how far his Light of Extreme Darkness had expanded, a loud rumble came from his body. At the instant it resounded within him, Su Ming felt that his Light of Extreme Darkness had reached a boundary and broken through some sort of seal. His heart trembled.

The Light of Extreme Darkness spreading out from his body seemed to have become slightly different from before, but Su Ming could not tell what exactly was different. The only thing he could see was that the two runic symbols in his body had fused together and become even more complicated. He had a strong feeling... that they had truly fused together.

They were no longer fusing together to absorb the power from the void and separating to release light. It looked like they would no longer separate from then on.

At the same time, Su Ming sensed that he no longer needed to control anything or release anything. The Light of Extreme Darkness which had appeared around him in this area of tens of millions of feet seemed... to have become an eternal existence!

'Essence of Light!'

Su Ming came to a swift realization. At that moment, not only was he no longer required to continuously release power to form the Light of Extreme Darkness, he himself had become an Essence of Light which could constantly release it.

Soon after, Su Ming sensed that there were four origins of the Light of Extreme Darkness which were the exact same as him in the boundless ocean of light!

These were four ancient origins of light, and it was clear that they had existed for countless years. They had naturally formed after the scattered Lights of Extreme Darkness in the endless streams of light had gathered together.

An ancient feeling rose in Su Ming's heart at that moment. When he perceived the four origins of light from the distance, a brilliant glare shone in his eyes.

Since he had become the Light of Extreme Darkness, he would become the one and only Light of Extreme Darkness in this world. This thought stemmed from Su Ming's personality. As his eyes sparkled, he swept up the tens of millions of feet worth of ocean formed by his Light of Extreme Darkness, and as a loud bang shot up into the air, he swiftly traveled towards the closest origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness.

The memory of him devouring the portions of Ecang's real self in the past arose in Su Ming's head. However, this time, he was not going to devour the sentient Ecang. Instead, he was going to devour the Light of Extreme Darkness born in this world.

He would do so to become the one and only source in this place. This was Su Ming's personality, and also an unseen law in this world. No one had set it down, and neither was there any living beings who had the right to form this law. It was just how nature was.

It was similar to that moment. The boundless lights in the ocean of light shone with a dazzling brilliance, but they were not sentient. This meant that once one of them became a sentient being, the other similar forms of light would be made to merge with it.

The ones who were sentient would gather the others to fuse with them. This was one of the unseen laws in the universe. It could not be changed, and no one would want to change it.

Time trickled by. With his speed after he turned into the Light of Extreme Darkness, Su Ming reached a vast mass of black seawater several days later. It was an ocean formed by black light, and it was born from the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness which was the exact same entity as he.

The process of Su Ming devouring it began the moment he saw it. The black Light of Extreme Darkness fused with him, and there was not a single bit of struggle from it. In just a few breaths, a long howl reverberated in the ocean of light. At that instant, both

origins of light fused completely. A gigantic ball of light exuding light which could spread to one hundred million feet appeared in the ocean of light.

As that huge ball of the Light of Extreme Darkness appeared and Su Ming's howl reverberated in the ocean of light, his heart trembled again, and the feeling as if some sort of seal had been broken rose in his heart. At that instant, the other three balls of the Light of Extreme Darkness which he had perceived from the distance earlier collapsed simultaneously to turn into countless Lights of Extreme Darkness that charged towards him at an extreme speed from all directions.

Their act of drawing closer to him made it seem like Su Ming had become the Progenitor of the Light of Extreme Darkness, and all of the Lights of Extreme Darkness born in this ocean of light longed to fuse with him. They charged forward, and within several days, they continuously approached him. The ball of light which was Su Ming continued expanding from its previous one hundred million feet.

Every single time he fused with a ray of the Light of Extreme Darkness, the ball of light would become slightly larger. Once he had fused with all the Lights of Extreme Darkness within his perception, his heart roared, and the ocean of light within a circular area of three hundred million feet turned black!

Yet it was also at that moment that six other huge origins of light appeared in Su Ming's perception. They were all larger than Su Ming, and they were so far away from him that even if he turned into the Light of Extreme Darkness and charged forward at full speed, he would still need hundreds of years to reach them.

The ocean of light was simply too big; there was no end to it. In fact, Su Ming had a very strong feeling that even if he fused with the six origins of light, he would still sense even larger origins of the Light of Extreme Darkness in the endless ocean of light.

"Cultivating light is like cultivating Dao... There is no end to light, and there is... no end to Dao," Su Ming mumbled. He seemed to have come to understand something from the Light of Extreme Darkness, but when he pondered over it, he felt as if he had not understood anything.

In silence, he gave up on continuing to fuse with the other Lights of Extreme Darkness. It was not because he could not do it, but because it would require too much time, and as of then, time was incredibly precious to him.

"It's about time that I leave, but before I do, I still need one more light."

All the Lights of Extreme Darkness around Su Ming vanished, and he changed into the figure with the black attire. While standing in the ocean of light, he looked like he was the master of the area. Mumbling under his breath, he took a step forward.

He walked among all the colorful lights until he found... the light with dashes of red and white intersecting with each other, the one which allowed him to see the veins from the Seed of Life Extermination on his Nascent Divinity.

He swung his arm and took a strand of it into his own body. Once he placed it in his Nascent Divinity, he prepared to leave the ocean of light. Suddenly though, his expression changed and he turned into the Light of Extreme Darkness. The ocean of light of three hundred million feet appeared in his heart.

Su Ming saw the bald crane carefully swimming through the ocean of light in the distance. It would occasionally scream and at other times curse. It looked like the damage to it from the rays of light varied; some of them would hurt worse, while the others would only injure it lightly. It was evading all the ones which would deal heavy damage while moving forward through the ocean of light.

At the same time, Su Ming saw an existence which was clearly a soul thread moving in another direction. It had attached itself to a ray of light and was struggling to keep itself afloat. However, it looked like it was about to dissipate.

After a moment of pensive silence, Su Ming raised his foot and took a step forward. His body vanished, and when he appeared, he was right in front of the bald crane. The moment he showed up, the bald crane screamed.

“Darn it all, just what sort of rotten luck do I have?! T-T-This is... This is an Essence of Light! I’m done for! I’m seriously done for! Su Ming, you thrice cursed bastard, it’s not that I don’t want to save you, but I’m in trouble myself!!” As the bald crane screamed, it swiftly retreated with fear on its face.

But the bald crane could not be blamed for not recognizing Su Ming. In its eyes, there was no Su Ming, but a figure with the Light of Extreme Darkness spreading out from it. That light cut off all forms of presences from appearing beyond it, and all other rays of light avoided the area, not daring to get any closer. To the bald crane, this proved that it was faced with an Essence of Light.

Su Ming smiled faintly, but the bald crane could not see it. With swing of his arm, a ball of Light of Extreme Darkness enveloped the bald crane. He brought it through space, straight where he had sensed the soul thread.

Chapter 1128: Do Enter My Trap

“O Lord Essence of Light, please spare me, and you can be my grandson... This is just nonsense, what am I saying? Spare me, please, take pity on me. I have a wife and

children, y-you... Damn it, you stupid Essence of Light, you're not sentient, so there's no use for me to even bother begging for mercy!"

As the bald crane screamed, its body shuddered. It was enveloped by a large ball made of the Light of Extreme Darkness. As Su Ming moved forward, the bald crane's voice continued echoing around him.

"Damn it, why was there an Essence of Light here? I avoided all of them so carefully, and I even sensed that the closest one was very far away from me just moments ago. The region in which I was should have had no origins of light!

"Little Boy Su, you seriously came to be the death of me. My crystals, farewell! I'm such a pitiful crane, I haven't even collected enough of you. I only have such a small amount. I'm such a pitiful crane for not fulfilling my grand wish to buy an entire True World..."

While the bald crane wailed, Su Ming reached the spot where the soul thread was. He saw it at first glance. The soul thread had attached itself to a ray of milky white light which was a little strange. It was not harmful, and instead nourished Nascent Divinities, which was why the soul thread was only dissipating. Otherwise, it would have disintegrated a long time ago.

Clearly, the soul thread knew about the milky white light, which was why it had thought of such a method to prolong its life.

As he stared at the soul thread, surprise appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He lifted his right hand and pointed at the milky white light. Immediately, a memory rose in his mind; it came from the milky white light. In it, Su Ming saw the soul thread appear a month ago.

It had arrived at the exact same time as Su Ming.

"Huh? You're just an Essence of Light, so what are you doing? You know how to lift your hand? Ah! I understand now, you can move freely! You intentionally appeared in front of me! This is impossible, origins of light are not sentient! How could they move?"

The bald crane stared at Su Ming's figure from the envelopment of the Light of Extreme Darkness. The person before it looked incredibly bizarre, and the bald crane shouted out in surprise and disbelief.

Su Ming lifted his right hand and flicked the space in front of him. Immediately, the milky white light started twisting, bouncing off the soul thread, and Su Ming caught it.

"You... You... You have an arm! You are sentient! Oh heavens, you are sentient!" the bald crane shouted out and began rambling on. When Su Ming seized the soul thread with his right hand, he sent over a crystal with a fling of his left hand.

The bald crane caught it on instinct and placed it in its beak to bit down hard. Its expression lit up the next moment. In fact, both its bald tail and butt were shaken several times.

Su Ming gripped the soul thread. It struggled feebly in his hand, but under the Light of Extreme Darkness, its struggles were futile. A divine sense possessing Su Ming's Light of Extreme Darkness fused swiftly into that soul thread, and when it could no longer resist him, he sent it straight into its core.

During that instant, Su Ming saw a memory from the soul thread, and several pictures immediately appeared in his mind.

The first picture was of an unfamiliar universe. A black-robed man took a step from a tall mountain and plunged down. As his body scrapped against air, he disappeared without a trace.

The second picture was of the same black-robed man standing beyond a gigantic pillar of light. By his side was Bai Feng, whose existence still made Su Ming's heart clench in pain, along with an old man whom Su Ming could recognize at first glance. It was the old Di Tian.

In fact, Su Ming could even hear most of their conversation.

The third picture was of the black-robed man sitting cross-legged in the pillar of light and executing the replacement plan. It was due to him that the Ancient God had self-destructed out of nowhere.

Once the pictures disappeared, the soul thread shattered in Su Ming's hand.

'A replacement plan... This soul thread was prepared for Possession. If I hadn't stepped into the world beyond the universe, then once the Ancient God self-destructed, it would have crawled into my body and Possessed me.' A hint of contempt appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

'If that's the case, then the three Hidden Dynasts, Dao Hua, and Dao Lin should have been successfully Possessed and become part of the Immortals' Union. This soul thread... was a portion of the black-robed man's soul.

'If he could do this with a portion of his soul, then it's clear just how powerful his real strength is.

'Sublime Paragon Di Tian... so he wants to cast the Life Changing Art on my real physical body. He wants to borrow my real physical body to change everything about himself with the help of the Saint Defiers and become an Abyss Builder!' A freezing glare shone in Su Ming's eyes.

‘Three months, huh? I’ve been here for about a month. I should be able to make it back!’ Su Ming closed his eyes, and a myriad of thoughts flashed through his head. It was a chance... a chance for him to seize his real physical body back!

While Su Ming thought, the bald crane put away the crystal and stared cautiously at him while completely enveloped by black light. It was feeling slightly anxious. At that moment, it let out a dry cough and put on an obsequious expression.

“Um... o one and only sentient Lord Essence of Light in this ocean of light, do you need a handsome, smart, all-knowing, efficient, intelligent, wise, and kind great bald crane?

“Let me be your follower... I...”

When the bald crane began to speak anxiously, Su Ming opened his eyes. With a smile that the bald crane could not see, he sized it up.

“Kind?” he asked languidly. Through the Light of Extreme Darkness, his voice held a chilling tone in the bald crane’s ears. It caused its body to shudder, but its spirit was immediately lifted.

“That’s right, I’m a kind soul. When I see people in need, I will lend a hand. When I see people dead, I will shed tears for them and bury them. When I see children, I will be happy. I—” the bald crane quickly said.

“You lend yourself a hand to their storage bags to see how many crystals they have. You loot the corpses for their crystals, and since children are gullible in your eyes, you scam them for their crystals,” Su Ming said flatly.

These words momentarily stunned the bald crane.

“Um... do we know each other? Y-Y-You... Are you..?”

Su Ming smiled. The Light of Extreme Darkness surrounding him vanished to reveal his Nascent Divinity, and he stared at the bald crane with a smile.

The bald crane placed its wing over its chest and let out a pained scream. It took a few steps back with anger overtaking its features. It raised its claw and pointed at Su Ming as extreme sadness showed up on its face.

“SU MING!!! All of my hardships were in vain! I was walking at death’s door and was even prepared to die! I sacrificed a large number of crystals and spent tens of thousands, no, hundreds of thousands of years worth of my life to find you, and you... y-y-you... how could you, just now... Oh! I am sad, I am too sad! I’ve been scammed! Darn you! I’ve been bullied!”

The bald crane started wailing, then decided to fall down and start rolling about.

Su Ming brought his right hand up and flicked a crystal towards the bald crane. Once it caught it, it immediately beamed, but then immediately suppressed the smile and started screaming again.

“Do you think you can compensate me with just one crystal?! This is a humiliation to me! I, the great bald crane, will definitely not bend over for just one crystal, I—”

With a tinkle, another crystal fell. The bald crane watched dumbly as the crystal fell in front of it. A brilliant smile appeared on its face. This time, no matter how hard it tried, it could not suppress the excitement on its face.

Especially when...

With another tinkle, the third crystal landed. It was followed by the fourth crystal and the fifth. The bald crane immediately stopped rolling around and grabbed all of the crystals, then coughed dryly.

“Alright, I forgive—”

With a tinkle, the sixth crystal landed.

“You’re completely right! Darn it all, Lord Su, everything you did was right—”

With another tinkle, the seventh crystal fell.

“Again! Should we do something like this again?!” The bald crane was so excited that its whole body trembled, and it made a suggestion the mere thought of which made it happy.

Su Ming stared at the bald crane, and a smile appeared on his face. He had long since treated the bald crane as his friend, but it was a friend whom he could not let become too conceited, or else the things which had happened in Black Ink Planet would repeat without end.

“Alright, we should leave now. There are important things we need to do.” Su Ming raised his head to stare at the endless ocean of light, and a dark glint shone in his eyes. With a swing of his arm, he swept up the bald crane and charged into the distance.

...

Several days later, space distorted in an area in Morning Daro Sect which belonged to the Immortals’ Union and was near the core of their territory. It was an empty galaxy in which a ball of black light suddenly shone.

When Su Ming and the bald crane walked out of the black light, it scattered away, revealing the black-haired Su Ming dressed in black robes. Standing with a profound

gaze, he looked like he had been reborn. The aura he exuded might still belong to those in Mastery Realm, but he, who could now turn into the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness and had created the Ocean Remover Art, had become much stronger than before.

“Even the world under space and beyond the universe cannot stop me from returning to this place. I... am back,” Su Ming mumbled. At that moment, he no longer appeared as Dao Kong, but had instead gained an unfamiliar appearance.

This was because he currently did not have a physical body and only possessed a Nascent Divinity.

Yet even if he was only a Nascent Divinity, he could still bring forth a power that could shock others.

“Do you want to seize back that real physical body of yours that you mentioned was in the Immortals’ Union? Darn it all, let’s go! Let’s go seize back your physical body! I’ll go loot crystals.” The bald crane spoke with excitement. While doing so, it started shuddering, and the loud racket it created resounded in space.

“The chances of success for entering the Immortals’ Union and snatching back my physical body with my current level of cultivation are not high,” Su Ming said faintly.

“Then what should we do?” The bald crane was taken aback.

“We will let those from the Immortals’ Union and Saint Defier, or even Di Tian himself, personally bring us in.” A wicked smile appeared on Su Ming’s lips.

The bald crane scrutinized him in surprise before starting to mumble in its heart. It wondered if Su Ming had gone mad after he became the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness.

It suddenly became slightly worried about what would happen to the now crazy man...

While the bald crane was busy being worried, dark light shone in Su Ming’s eyes, and the Light of Extreme Darkness surrounded him. It became stronger and stronger before covering the whole area in that part of the galaxy.

‘The Light of Extreme Darkness... It is a light with incredibly powerful might, so all those who see it will feel tempted...’

Chapter 1129: Greed

‘So what if they’ve seen me use the Light of Extreme Darkness before? They won’t be able to guess that I’ve become the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness!’

‘And so what if this origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness appeared a little too abruptly? Unless they’re completely not tempted...’

A distortion in space that lasted for nearly seven days had appeared in the galaxy near the Immortals’ territory. The area of the distortion spread to three hundred million feet, and it caught the attention of plenty of cultivators in the Immortals’ Union.

It was especially so when the distortions turned into a gigantic crack on the seventh day. A black ray of light that seemed to be able to freeze the universe popped out then. The light continued spreading outwards and turned into the completed version of the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness!

It shone without end within that area of three hundred million feet. This scene instantly stunned the entire Immortals’ Union. In fact, when another seven days passed, even Morning Dao Sect learned of it.

In fact... the battle between the two sides gradually come to a stop after that huge origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness appeared. Countless gazes landed on that area belonging to the Immortals’ Union.

Every single day, a large number of cultivators from the Immortals’ Union would surround the area of three hundred million feet and observe the Light of Extreme Darkness which had suddenly appeared half a month ago. There was shock in their gazes along with greed.

They could sense a chill that could freeze their hearts spreading out from the Light of Extreme Darkness, and they could also sense the terrifying power contained within it.

Throughout the twenty-four hour time period, there would only be two hours when the gigantic origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness was slightly weaker. However, after those two hours, it would shine brighter than at any other time of the day.

Those two hours changed every single day. The change was governed by a certain pattern, so many people realized that the Essence of Light was not sentient. It was only changing on instinct.

The cultivators might not know why it had suddenly appeared in the galaxy, but it was a supreme treasure which everyone desired greatly.

If they could obtain and refine it, then the power of their divine abilities would be greatly enhanced. In fact, even the famous Light of Extreme Darkness in Morning Dao Sect was just a light gathered together to form a Striking Land. There were rumors that Progenitor Dao Chen had personally subjugated it tens of thousands of years ago.

But what appeared at that moment was not a single ray of light, but a gigantic Essence of Light. This difference was akin to a bright moon compared to a candle flame, and the greed grew endlessly in the hearts of all the cultivators who learned about this matter.

After all, it was not just a Light of Extreme Darkness, but... a huge Essence of Light. If they could refine it, they would enjoy great successes. If any race took it, they would swiftly increased in power. And if it was taken by Morning Dao Sect or the Immortals' Union, it could be refined into an astonishing supreme treasure, and in any battle, it could bring forth outstanding power.

The appearance of the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness caught the attention of the powerful cultivators in the Immortals' Union. However, the core members which came from the Immortals' sects and Phoenix Sect had locked down the area where the Light of Extreme Darkness had appeared the moment it showed up.

It had appeared practically on the Immortals' doorstep, so they were naturally the first to notice it. The ones who were sent to observe it were then mostly from the Immortals' sects.

"This is indeed the Light of Extreme Darkness..."

When it was the twentieth day since the Light of Extreme Darkness had appeared, the white-robed Bai Feng stood in the galaxy nearly and spoke coldly to himself while staring at it.

By her side was Di Tian, who was also dressed in white and had a head full of white hair. He seemed a little older than he was a month ago. His stare was fixed on the Light of Extreme Darkness, though no one knew what he was thinking.

Between the two was the black-robed man which belonged to the Eight Paramount Daos and who had come from Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos. His face was hidden under the black hood, but it could not conceal the surprised glint in his eyes.

'Origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness is a rare origin which can only be found beyond the universe of the Expanse Cosmos where it is born... It has already disappeared from Saint Defier's camp.

'The Light of Extreme Darkness is something which only grows in developing Expanse Cosmoes and will disappear when the Expanse Cosmos has fully developed! Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, this boundless galaxy only has a sliver of a chance to evolve into an Expanse Cosmos like Saint Defier and Dark Dawn in the future and develop its own 180 Expanse Cosmoes. This dazzling light can only appear in this developing, primitive Expanse Cosmos...

'To Arid Triad, Saint Defier and Dark Dawn are the elderly, while it is still an infant. Whoever obtains this infant will overpower the other camp and become the one and only existence in this endless universe!

'I didn't expect that I would be able to see... the dazzling origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness in this primitive Arid Triad when my body had just descended for around a thousand years!' The black-robed man's eyes sparkled, and he sighed with great emotion in his heart.

"Make arrangements. I want people to be constantly moving into the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness during the next half a month, and I want them to find its core. Lock down the perimeter and forbid all others from stepping in. Kill all those who violate this!" The black-robed man's eyes sparkled as he spoke slowly.

"Sublime Paragon Di Tian, if I can gain control over this Light of Extreme Darkness, the chances of Life Changing Art succeeding will increase by another two-tenths. Even if I cannot refine it within a short period of time, all I need is to leave the Brand of my divine sense at its core to gain basic control over it."

Di Tian's eyes swiftly focused. He cast a glance at the black-robed man before lifting his right arm. A jade slip appeared on his palm, and once he crushed it, it turned into nine wisps of smoke that left rapidly into the distance. Soon after, all the Immortals' sects executed a tight lockdown on the area.

"Fellow Daoist Bai Feng, you might have been recommended by your Master, but there are still plenty of obstructions before you can become a cultivator of Saint Defier. Your body is unable to withstand the Return Reversal Art, but if I obtain this origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness smoothly, then I, along with your Master, will recommend you. With my status as Eight Paramount Dao, I could increase your chances of becoming a cultivator of Saint Defier by two-tenths!"

Bai Feng's expression remained the same. In silence, she cast a cold glance at the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness.

"Senior, don't you think that this Essence of Light came too suddenly? You do know that Dao Kong had control over the Light of Extreme Darkness before he was forced into the world beyond the universe."

"It's precisely because he had control over the Light of Extreme Darkness that this origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness appeared in this universe. There is a connection between them, though your worries are also noteworthy, Fellow Daoist Bai Feng."

The black-robed man laughed loudly. Even though he said those words, he paid no heed to them. In his eyes, Dao Kong had controlled only the Light of Extreme Darkness, while as before his eyes was the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness. The difference between the two was akin to heaven and hell.

“But we do still need to conduct the necessary tests.”

As the black-robed man laughed hoarsely, he appeared near the Light of Extreme Darkness. He rose his right hand and struck the center of his brows. Immediately, a great will rushed out with a bang and like a gust of invisible wind that charged towards the Light of Extreme Darkness.

After a moment, the black-robed man's body jolted. When he retrieved his will, his eyes under the hood shone with excitement.

“It is indeed the Light of Extreme Darkness. There's no hint of any consciousness in it. There's absolutely no chance of it being fake!”

Still laughing, the black-robed man took a few steps back, but he did not immediately make any rash movements. He knew that there was a force in the Light of Extreme Darkness that could gravely injure Nascent Divinities. However, because it was not sentient, there was a pattern to all of its changes. Once he found a path leading to its core, he could put his Brand and claim it for himself.

When he had sent his divine sense into it, he had immediately sensed the great power and changes within it. The separation of light when it intersected made even him not dare to force his way inside. In fact, he had even sensed a hint of danger.

Yet the more dangerous it was, the more it stirred up the black-robed man's greed. He was also anxious though. He knew that in a month's time, Xing Ji Dao would arrive, and if he had not obtained the Light of Extreme Darkness by then, he would have a competitor.

“Then I will have the cultivators of the Immortals' Union continue fighting against Morning Dao Sect so that they will not be able to spare a single bit of their attention to set their sights on the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness. As for your promise, I thank you, senior,” Bai Feng said coldly, then bent her knees slightly and bowed to the black-robed man.

“You flatter me,” the black-robed man said with a smile, then turned around and vanished to return to the spot beyond the pillar of light in the Immortals' territory. When his body reappeared, the smile on his face disappeared and was replaced by a stern expression. He raised his right hand and struck the pillar of light. Immediately, the colors within it became muddled, and gradually, seven distorted figures manifested.

“The Seven Fingers under me, fuse into the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness and investigate it clearly. Find out whether it is man-made and whether it really is not sentient as the rumors say!”

“I will give you ten days. You must finish your search by then,” the black-robed man said flatly. Immediately, the seven distorted figures flashed in the pillar of light and turned

into seven black-robed man who bent their backs and bowed to him before disappearing as one.

Immortals' Union went into full operation. Every single day, there were numerous cultivators entering the Light of Extreme Darkness to investigate. Usually, only one out of ten people who stepped in would be able to survive.

As time passed and the number of dead and wounded increased, Morning Dao Sect executed a large-scale investigation. However, since the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness had appeared near the core of the territory which belonged to the Immortals' Union, Morning Dao Sect could not do much.

All of the investigations went on methodically. In fact, seven black-robed man had arrived in the Light of Extreme Darkness several days earlier without making a single sound, and they had begun a detailed investigation of it.

Su Ming saw all that happened around him. He saw the divine sense of the black-robed man descend on him, and he also saw the seven presences which belonged to the seven black-robed man who were much weaker than the former. They carried out an investigation in his light.

Su Ming also saw Di Tian as well as Bai Feng who looked exactly like Bai Ling...

Because he was the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness, it matter how and who investigated, Su Ming was still the Light of Extreme Darkness. The only thing he needed to do was hide his will and present to them a being without sentience.

With the bald crane's help, all of this was very simple.

It was Su Ming's trap, a trap in which he used himself as bait. He was waiting for people to take him... and personally bring him into the tightly defended Immortals' Union.

And the day for it... was drawing close.

Chapter 1130: Deceit!

"There's something wrong with this Essence of Light!" When another seven or eight days passed, Bai Feng stood beyond the Light of Extreme Darkness. There was an aloof expression in her eyes, but her brows were furrowed.

She had felt from the beginning that the Essence of Light had appeared too suddenly, and there was even a strange feeling about it.

Bai Feng was not the only one who felt this. It could be said that plenty of cultivators were hesitant, but before them was indeed the Light of Extreme Darkness. Because of that, even if they were hesitant and uncertain, that was all. It didn't affect their actions.

Su Ming did not fine tune his plan. In fact, it could be said that there were plenty of weaknesses in it, but Su Ming did not care. As long as he was the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness, it was enough.

Just this alone was enough!

This could be considered a straightforward plan that everyone could understand. However, it could also be said that it could not even be considered a scheme. It was a game in which Su Ming used himself as bait. During the past few days, he had seen countless cultivators come over and swim about in his Light of Extreme Darkness while investigating it.

Su Ming did not become anxious. He constantly waited for someone who was worthy enough to take the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness. To Su Ming, there were only three people who were worthy to do so in the Immortals' Union. One of them was naturally the aloof Bai Feng beyond the Essence of Light, the other was Di Tian, and the third was the black-robed man who was one of the Eight Paramount Daos.

Di Tian planned to have his Life change while Bai Feng wished to become an Immortal in Saint Defier. Both of them had their own needs, and there was also the black-robed man.

This coincided with Su Ming's previous analysis. He had been waiting for the black-robed man in the first place, since he had learned from the soul thread that another powerful warrior from Saint Defier's camp was about to descend.

It would be a powerful warrior who had the same status as the black-robed man. This would naturally create a competition. That was why Su Ming was certain that if the black-robed man was tempted, he would definitely come to obtain the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness before his companion descended.

Time passed, and the war between Morning Dao Sect and the Immortals' Union reached its climax. Every single day, there would be intense, large-scale battles in numerous places in the True World. The number of casualties reached a terrifying number, but even so, the war did not end. It just went on even more fiercely.

A few more days passed. When there was less than a month left before the other Almighty from Saint Defier's camp would descend, numerous Immortal cultivators surrounded the Light of Extreme Darkness layer by layer. They had investigated most of the interior of the light and discovered its pattern. They had also found a path leading to the core.

Su Ming did steer the direction of their investigation. The only thing he did was to turn himself into the Light of Extreme Darkness. As for the other things, if he interfered too much, it would seem too fake.

On that day, the black-robed man appeared beyond the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness again. This time, he had clearly made enough preparations.

The eyes hidden under the black hood sparkled brilliantly, and vast power spread out from his body. It was a power that was equivalent to those in Life Realm, but it was definitely not something those in Life Realm within Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos could win against. There was a huge disparity between them.

‘Arcane Void, the Third Step of the cultivation system belonging to Saint Defier’s camp!’ Su Ming sensed the presence of the power from the black-robed man as well as the vague and slow-moving ripples coming from his divine sense.

‘Dao Kong’s body was destroyed, but as long as my Nascent Divinity is still around, then every single body I have will exude the presence of Dao Kong’s soul. It’s the same for Ecang’s body, and I can do the same thing for that clone of mine which practices the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole.

‘But this black-robed man... might be suitable to become another one of my clones, a body which will allow me to obtain a status within Saint Defier’s camp!

‘If I went along with my original plan, I wouldn’t need to Possess him, but now... Perhaps Possessing him... would make the process of seizing back my physical body slightly smoother.

‘But the difficulty in this is too great. He is, after all, an Almighty in Arcane Void Realm...’

In silence, Su Ming slowly pushed down the thought which had suddenly sprouted in his head. He would not allow anything unexpected to happen when it came to him seizing back his physical body.

Su Ming temporarily gave up on that thought.

The instant the ripples from Su Ming’s divine sense dissipated, the black-robed man who was already in Arcane Void Realm standing beyond the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness slowly raised his foot and walked towards the Essence of Light with the respect of the countless Immortal cultivators around him.

Bai Feng was by his side. She formed a seal with her right hand and pointed at space. Immediately, the galaxy distorted, and huge eyeballs appeared. Thousands of them surrounded the area. Dark light shone in each pupil as they stared at the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness.

The black-robed man came to a halt before he turned his head around and cast a glance at Bai Feng. She bent her knees slightly, lowered her head, and bowed.

“Not bad!” The black-robed man laughed hoarsely, and praise appeared in his eyes. Bai Feng’s action might not seem to be truly useful, but her intentions could be seen, and this brought the black-robed man satisfaction. Since Bai Feng was always incredibly beautiful and bold, the black-robed man kept on feeling somewhat tempted.

“When you go to Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos, you can stay by my side.”

Bai Feng’s face might still be icy cold, but a hint of a smile appeared. There was surprised delight within it, and a barely noticeable bashfulness that was just right on her face. It caused the black-robed man to immediately admire her even more.

Di Tian, who was dressed in white and had a head full of white hair, had a calm expression on his face at that moment. He did not need to do anything to prove anything. He might long to become an Abyss Builder, but he knew that Saint Defier’s camp longed even more to be able to control an Abyss Builder.

And Di Tian, without a doubt, was the best choice. He was confident that there was no one who could surpass him in this regard, not even those from the Emperor of Abyss’ True World, because he was the one who thought of this plan, and he had been preparing for it for countless years.

In fact, even without Saint Defier’s help, he would have three-tenths of a chance to become an Abyss Builder. The help from the Saint Defiers would just raise his chances. A hint of a brilliant light flashed briefly in Di Tian’s eyes.

‘Su Xuan Yi, we’ve fought against each other our entire lives, and this time, I will stand before you as an Abyss Builder and Possess you!’

‘In the end, I will be the one who will win between us!’ Various emotions surged up in Di Tian’s heart. He had been longing for this day for far too long.

Under the gazes of the countless cultivators in the area, the black-robed man took a step forward and stepped into the Light of Extreme Darkness.

The powerful warriors from the Immortals’ sects guarded the area with vigilant expressions. They had been given orders to prevent any sort of problems from arising in this area during this period of time, and should they fail, they would die.

But fortunately, they were at the core of the Immortals’ Union. This was the entrance to the Immortals’ sects, which was why it would definitely not be easy for those from Morning Dao Sect to reach it even if they wanted to.

The possibility of them invading en masse was very small. Perhaps individual powerful warriors might rush in, but Di Tian had already made perfect preparations to prevent this.

When the black-robed man stepped into the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness, the many cultivators in the periphery became on guard. Time trickled by, and soon, the time taken by an incense stick to burn went by.

The black-robed man drifted in the Light of Extreme Darkness. He did not move quickly. Every single time he moved a certain amount of distance, he would stop for a moment to think. Then, he would change his direction before he moved forward. Endless Light of Extreme Darkness moved about around him. The rays of light moved forward with the black-robed man, becoming stronger as time passed.

The stronger they became, the more certain the black-robed man was that the Essence of Light was not sentient.

An hour later, the black-robed man had already completed half of his journey. He became slower. In fact, a large amount of chilling air spread out from his body. The Light of Extreme Darkness around him turned black, as if it had become a gaping mouth that wanted to devour him.

Wariness appeared in his eyes. Occasionally, he would take a few steps and lift his right hand, which made it look like he was calculating something. Like that, he finished seven-tenths of his journey in two full hours.

At that moment, the Light of Extreme Darkness swiftly grew several times brighter and stronger. However, the black-robed man seemed to have expected this since a long time ago. Before the light became stronger, he sat down cross-legged, and as he formed a seal with his hands, he immediately brought out a small cauldron. When he pushed his hands against it, he breathed out a breath of his life at it.

Green light shone on the small cauldron and enveloped him. The light was as smooth as a mirror, and it continuously reflected the incoming Light of Extreme Darkness. Indirectly, the cauldron had become an Essence of Light.

'It truly only weakens for two hours...' A faint smile appeared on the black-robed man's lips. When he closed his eyes, he seemed to relax all forms of resistance. Instead, he placed all his attention on controlling the small cauldron.

When a day passed and the time came for the Light of Extreme Darkness to become weak again, the black-robed man immediately opened his eyes. He put away the small cauldron, then moved forward again.

Since his advance grew harder, when two hours passed, he was still a distance away from the core of the Light of Extreme Darkness.

When the light grew strong again, he sat down cross-legged and used the green light from the small cauldron to fight against it. He closed his eyes and appeared to be very much at ease. He did nothing to fend against anything else.

The third day, the fourth day... When the two hours of the Light of Extreme Darkness weakening during the fifth day nearly ended, the black-robed man reached the core!

It was a dark world, but it could be vaguely seen that there was a perfect runic symbol in the darkness not too far away. It was so complicated that it felt like it would be difficult to remember no matter how many times one looked at it, not to mention that it was barely noticeable in the darkness.

‘This is the core of the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness!’

A glint shone in the eyes of the black-robed man, and excitement could be seen on his face. At the instant the two hours during which the Light of Extreme Darkness weakened were about to end, he spread his divine sense outwards and swept it towards the runic symbol. He could sense no form of consciousness over there, but it seemed like he did not have enough time to leave his divine sense as a Brand.

When the span of two hours during which the light weakened passed, the vast power from the runic symbol erupted, forcing the black-robed man to immediately sit down and use the small cauldron to protect himself. He also closed his eyes, and beside the green light surrounding him, he didn’t use anything else to protect himself.

The instant the two hours during which the light weakened arrived on the sixth day, the black-robed man moved swiftly and charged towards the runic symbol. When he approached it, his body collapsed with a bang. Blood and flesh spilled everywhere, and all of them fell on the runic symbol.

At the same time, a ferocious expression appeared on the black-robed man’s face. With disbelief, he swiftly retreated while screaming in a piercing voice.

“This is a trap! You are sentient!”

Su Ming, who had been observing the black-robed man, was taken aback by the bizarre scene, because he had done absolutely nothing.

Chapter 1131: As for Su Ming...

The black-robed man's soul became weaker and weaker under the Light of Extreme Darkness. As he charged forward, his piercing voice echoed in the air as if he wanted to make sure all the people outside learned of what he had found out.

Su Ming remained composed and did not move in the slightest. He only stared coldly at the black-robed man's soul doing its solo performance.

Around a dozen breaths later, when the black-robed man had fled tens of thousands of feet away, he swiftly came to a halt. When he turned his head around, the panic and fear on his face disappeared, and it was replaced with a faint smile.

He immediately returned to the spot of the runic symbol. Once he observed it carefully, he rushed forward, causing his soul to directly crash against the runic symbol. With a bang, it turned into countless threads that wrapped themselves tightly around the runic symbol.

'This black-robed man is really cautious. He didn't use his real body to come into contact with me, but sent his subordinates to come forth and indirectly retrieve me as well as to continuously test me.'

Su Ming observed the runic symbol which had appeared after he turned into the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness, then sensed that the soul threads were continuously fusing into him.

After a moment, when the second black-robed man arrived, his body also collapsed with a bang. His blood and flesh splattered on the runic symbol, and his soul also turned into countless soul threads that sped up the process of fusing with the runic symbol.

Like that, the third, fourth, and fifth body arrived... All the seven black-robed man who were in Su Ming's Light of Extreme Darkness self-destructed around the runic symbol. The flesh and blood dyed the runic symbol in blood, and the souls completely covered it. Then, the blood and flesh which had scattered all around the runic symbol started swiftly shining with a crimson light that surged into the heavens.

At that instant, the crimson light seemed to form a Rune. It shone several times, and another black-robed man walked out from within!

This black-robed man was in Arcane Void Realm, and he was naturally the black-robed old man who was one of the Eight Paramount Daos of the Saint Defier's camp.

It was just as Su Ming had deduced, everything from before was just a test. The black-robed man had lived for many years, and there was no way he would be reckless. Even if he was incredibly tempted and absolutely certain that there was no danger, he would still remain cautious.

However, even though he might call this a test, it was also his method to retrieve the origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness. He did not intend to do what those in the area outside thought he would. He did not wish to fuse the Light of Extreme Darkness into his body... but to refine and turn it into his own Enchanted Treasure.

He had planted portions of his soul in his seven subordinates, and with their flesh and blood, he activated the Relocation Rune. With their souls, he enveloped the runic symbols, and since they were a portion of him, he could indirectly refine the runic symbol without even touching it.

"It's fine even if you are not sentient. I will treat you as if you are," the black-robed old man said hoarsely in front of the runic symbol. When he raised his arms, he pointed at it, and immediately, all the black threads tightened. Ringing sounds reverberated in space, and all the black threads shattered to turn into black smoke that crawled into the runic symbol.

The black-robed man swung his arm and sat down cross-legged. He continuously formed seals with his hands, and all sorts of seals appeared out of thin air to Brand the runic symbol, which was now surrounded by black smoke.

Besides Su Ming's will, the bald crane's will was also in the runic symbol. At that moment, the bald crane was shivering while it used its talent as if it had gone completely mad. It was not fighting against the black-robed old man's brand, but was activating all of the tricks it had left behind beforehand which would cause the runic symbol to go through certain changes.

This was a decision they had come to after Su Ming and the bald crane had a discussion. If they divided the complete runic symbol to one hundred portions, then what Su Ming required the bald crane to do was hide seven-tenths of it. This was not difficult. The difficulty lay in making the others think that the remaining three-tenths were the complete runic symbol.

If it worked, Su Ming could wipe off the other person's will on the runic symbol at any time he wanted to complete his plan since he possessed most of it.

"Darn it all, how dare this man play tricks with me?! Little Boy Su, give me some stimulation. I need stimulation!" The bald crane shuddered and shouted at Su Ming. The black-robed old man's speed as he formed the seals was getting faster while he remained beyond the runic symbol, and the Brands were increasing in number. Hints of connection were swiftly being built between them.

"Two crystals," Su Ming stated calmly.

The bald crane let out an arrogant cry, instantly filled with excitement.

Su Ming had always believed that the bald crane did not have the concept of difference in numbers. As long as the number was greater than one, it was already considered stimulation in its eyes...

The black-robed old man beyond the runic symbol swiftly bit the tip of his tongue and coughed up a mouthful of blood. At the instant it fell on the runic symbol, it let out a bang, and the connection was completely formed.

"Twenty crystals," Su Ming stated flatly, and the bald crane's excitement reached its peak. At the instant the black-robed old man beyond the runic symbol coughed up blood and the connection was formed, the bald crane finally completed all it needed to prepare and activated its Art. The runic symbol did not change, but seven-tenths of it had been hidden away.

In a dozen of breaths, the black-robed old man's Brand occupied the entire runic symbol. Excitement appeared on his face, and he threw his head back to laugh.

He could sense that he had formed an inseparable connection with the ball of origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness. With just one thought, he could make it change, and he felt as if it had become a part of him. This was a feeling that came from his Blood Refinement having worked. It did not matter whether the Essence of Light had been sentient prior to his actions, for at that moment, the only will it had was of that black-robed man.

As he laughed long and hard, the black-robed old man raised his right hand and seized the runic symbol through space. Immediately, the runic symbol with Su Ming's Nascent Divinity shrank swiftly. The Light of Extreme Darkness around the area also shrank rapidly, and in an instant, it disappeared. The runic symbol then landed in the black-robed old man's withered hand.

When he squeezed it, the runic symbol disappeared and entered his body. It floated in his heart, enveloped by his Nascent Divinity. The feeling that he had gained control of the Light of Extreme Darkness instantly rose in the black-robed old man, and the aura of his cultivation base seemed to grow.

The Light of Extreme Darkness disappeared, and everything in the area was instantly revealed before the group of cultivators waiting outside. They saw the black-robed old man letting out a long string of laughter, and they also saw piercing black light suddenly spreading out from his body when he turned around.

Countless shrill screams of pain immediately rang out in the area. The light surrounded the tens of thousands of cultivators who had been guarding the area vigilantly. When they screamed, their bodies tumbled backwards, and they coughed up blood. Their souls had been severely wounded, and their bodies had instantly filled with a freezing chill. They bled from their eyes, nose, mouth, and ears. In fact, there were thousands of

cultivators whose souls crumbled straight away, and their bodies turned into ice that plunged down into the galaxy.

The black-robed old man's laughter grew even stronger. He did not care if the barbaric cultivators died. They were ants and not worthy to enter his sight.

At that moment, he was incredibly at ease and very satisfied with the power of the Light of Extreme Darkness. He made an analysis in his heart. If he spread out the Light of Extreme Darkness with his full power and used his cultivation base to control it, he could instantly kill the hundreds of thousands of people in this place.

Even in Saint Defier's camp, this sort of supreme treasure was rarely seen. With his status, it would be impossible for him to obtain it, but he could get it with extreme ease in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos. There was no way that he would not be excited over this.

The souls of hundreds of thousands of people in the area had been injured severely, but Di Tian paid no attention to it. He wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed to the black-robed old man.

"Congratulations on obtaining the supreme treasure, Fellow Daoist Zhang Ji Jun!"

A brilliant light shone in Bai Feng's eyes. A hint of a smile appeared on her indifferent face, and she bent her knees slightly to bow to the black-robed old man.

"Do not worry, the both of you. I will fulfill the promise I gave you earlier." The black-robed old man's laughter reverberated in the air.

When he was about to open his mouth and say something else, his expression swiftly changed, and he raised his head rapidly. A hint of surprise flashed in his eyes.

"He came earlier than what was planned... Hmph, looks like the Ancient Gods possess methods to send messages back to Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos!" A focused glint appeared in the black-robed old man's eyes, and a cold sneer twisted his lips.

Soon after, Di Tian's expression changed. When he turned his head back, excitement appeared in his eyes. He looked towards the pillar of light that shot towards the heavens from the Immortals' territory!

The pillar of light shone brilliantly, and in just the span of a few breaths, it instantly covered an area of one hundred thousand feet in width. When it surged into the heavens, all the cultivators in the area were able to see it clearly.

"Xing Ji Dao's clone has descended ahead of schedule. Fellow Daoist Di Tian, your serendipity is high. Oh well, we shan't let you wait any longer. We will go to the physical body of that Abyss Builder right now and retrieve it. Once Xing Ji Dao descends, we will

activate the Art together.” The black-robed old man swung his arm, and with a single move, he charged through space towards where the pillar of light was located.

Di Tian could not hide his excitement. Without any hesitation, he stepped into the Immortals’ territory to charge straight towards Su Ming’s physical body.

Bai Feng regained the icy cold look she had previously. She stared at the hundreds of thousands of cultivators around her, and contempt, which made it seem like she was staring at ants, showed up in her eyes. When she turned around, she hesitated for a moment before heading after the black-robed old man.

The pillar of light connecting Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos and True Morning Dao World shone with a piercing light. There was a powerful, mighty pressure spreading out from it with loud bangs.

There were countless runic symbols surrounding the pillar of light. Each of them had a pressure that could make a person suffocate.

Booming sounds spread through the entire Immortals’ Union. They traveled into each corner of the land until it affected the entire True Morning Dao World.

All the cultivators in True Morning Dao World sensed a mighty pressure that felt like a mountain pressing down on them at that instant. There was also a feeling that caused their hearts to tremble and even their souls to feel as if they were about to be ripped apart.

Almost the instant the pillar of light rumbled and the cultivator from Saint Defier’s camp descended, the eyes of Su Xuan Yi, who was still sitting in his isolation grounds in Morning Dao Sect and meditating flew open. Intense anticipation rose within him, something that looked like it had been suppressed for countless years. At that moment, it was finally ready to erupt from his body.

‘The first stage of my plan... is about to be completed... True Morning Dao World is no longer useful... I’ve been preparing for this for many years, Lord Sublime Paragon, you’d best not disappoint me. My fellow Daoists from Saint Defier’s camp, you will all have to work hard as well...

‘As for Su Ming...’ Su Xuan Yi fell silent. A glint shone in his eyes, and he frowned.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1132: Rattling Drum -
Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1132: Rattling Drum
Chapter 1132: Rattling Drum

'Where did that child go? I can't find him. This is something that has never happened before. The Seed of Life Extermination is about to become fully mature, but it seems like there is a power interfering with it... But as long as it doesn't affect the first stage of the plan, I'm fine with it. There are certain things he mustn't know before the Seed of Life Extermination matures.'

A complicated look appeared on Su Xuan Yi's face. He sighed softly, and a hint of regret appeared in his eyes. He lowered his head and stared at the rattling drum before him, then raised his hand and touched it gently.

'I'm sorry... but you really do not suit Yu Xuan, because you... really don't have the right to... I will use another method to make it up to you...' Su Xuan Yi closed his eyes.

Far away in the Emperor of Abyss' True World was a palace. It had a pink room which belonged to a girl and was filled with a strange, floral fragrance. It was definitely not something ordinary. With one whiff of that scent, a person's cultivation base would increase slightly. In fact, even their soul would be nourished.

If a person trained in that room, they would find that their progress was much faster than when they were outside of it. This sort of place was rarely seen in the entire Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, but it was present in the Emperor of Abyss' True World.

Yu Xuan was in that room. She sat quietly in there and stared at the starry sky beyond the window in a daze.

Before her was a table, and on that table was a tray with two things. One of them was a rattling drum. It was a toy she had possessed since she was a child. There were originally supposed to be two, but one of them had gone missing...

The other item was a black stone fragment.

If Su Ming was there, he would definitely be able to tell that the fragment... was identical to the one he had received from Xiao Hong.

It was... a fragment of the Seed of Life Extermination!

.....

The cultivators of the Immortals' Union were engaged against those in Morning Dao Sect in all sorts of intense battles in many parts of True Morning Dao World. The hearts of many cultivators from both sides trembled during the numerous battles, but there were few who knew the real reason for their war.

They did not know... that a disaster was about to descend on True Morning Dao World. They also did not know that the pillar of light at the core of the Immortals' Union had become extremely dazzling.

Beyond the pillar of light was the black-robed old man with his hands behind his back. By his side was Bai Feng, and with a gaze full of longing, she stared at the pillar of light. She wanted to become an Immortal. This was something she craved for deeply, and she could give up on everything for it.

Di Tian had also returned from the other side. Excitement was on his face. He had been waiting for this day for far too long. The results of his wait were about to show up. Even with his previous status of Sublime Paragon, he could not contain his emotions while he wondered whether he would fail and end up losing.

Time trickled by. The booming sounds lasted for the time it takes for two incense sticks to burn. When they became louder, an afterimage suddenly appeared at the top of the pillar of light. At an extreme speed, it shot down and descended in the area below.

Through the pillar of light, the trio could see that the afterimage had the shape of a person. The figure distorted and changed, as if moving from another world.

Waves of vast, mighty pressure shot through the pillar of light to spread out violently through the area. In fact, even the space in the surroundings started showing signs of cracking when a power that seemed to be able to make space change spread out with loud rumbles.

Di Tian's pupils shrank. He stood without moving, but his hair and robes rustled as they were blown by back by the pressure. Bai Feng's face turned pale. She gradually moved back, forcibly withstanding the spread of this mighty pressure.

"What a powerful cultivation!" Bai Feng sucked in a sharp breath.

The black-robed old man looked as calm as usual. With his hands behind his back, he stood still with a cold smile.

"It's not due to his level of cultivation. This is the power of the World that appeared due to the friction caused by movement between two worlds, and this is just a hint of it. Those who descend all possess this sort of power of the World, but when they come out of the pillar of that, it will disappear.

"But if we're talking about his real level of cultivation, then it'll be stronger than what you are sensing right now... It's a pity that the pillar of light leading to Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos still has flaws. Otherwise, us Eight Paramount Daos could send our real bodies here instead of using our souls to rebuild them.

“Xing Ji Dao is well-matched with me in terms of our levels of cultivation, and he is skilled in the power of stars. The changes in his power are fathomless...” As the black-robed old man spoke, he cast a glance at the afterimage who was rapidly being formed in the pillar of light before he suddenly smiled.

“Xing Ji Dao, it’s been a long time since we saw each other.”

At the moment the black-robed old man said those words, two spots of dark light shone in the distorting afterimage in the pillar of light. They were at the height of a person’s head, which made it seem like the figure had opened its eyes to reveal a fierce light aimed at the black-robed old man.

“Zhang Ji Dao, it’s only been one thousand something years since we met. Can you actually consider it to be a long time?” The new voice was not as hoarse as the black-robed old man’s, but had a gentle tone to it. When it spoke languidly, Bai Feng’s heart trembled, and she took a few steps back again.

Di Tian, however, remained standing still while staring at the pillar of light.

“You must be Fellow Daoist Di Tian.” The afterimage in the pillar of light became even more distorted. Yet even so, it gave them a feeling that it was becoming more corporeal. The two lights moved their gaze away from the black-robed old man and looked towards Di Tian.

“It is indeed me,” he said with a smile.

During that moment, the distorting afterimage in the pillar of light came to a halt, and an incredibly handsome middle-aged man with long hair appeared. He had an awe-inspiring face, and his eyes seemed to contain an entire galaxy. They had countless planets intersecting with each other to form runic symbols that changed continuously.

While the black-robed man looked towards the afterimage in the pillar of light, Su Ming too directed his attention to it. When he saw the newcomer, he verified that this was the person he had seen in the previous black-robed man’s memories.

Yet there was one thing that did not add up. The difference between this person’s level of cultivation and the one he saw in the black-robed man’s eyes was too great; it was like heaven and earth. However, when Su Ming thought of the black-robed old man’s words moments ago, he laughed coldly.

It seemed that not even those from Saint Defier could retain their complete level of cultivation when they descended. They needed to rebuild their bodies which would be akin to clones in which a large amount of power could be sent down. It was also likely that they would require some time to slowly recover.

Once the head appeared in the pillar of light, the rest of the body began to manifest as well. It was without clothes, and it looked like it was slowly growing from the top to the bottom.

The man's body was so perfect, the hearts of teenage girls would let out a loud thump upon seeing it. Bai Feng stared at it without blinking. No one could tell at that moment whether she was doing it intentionally or not, but a hint of red had appeared on her icy cold face, making it even more beautiful than usually.

"Could this beautiful Daoist be Phoenix Sect's Bai Feng?" The torso had already formed in the pillar, and the man's arms were growing rapidly at that moment. He looked towards Bai Feng with a smile.

"I, Bai Feng, greet Senior Xing Ji Dao." Bai Feng immediately lowered her head and bent her knees slightly to bow to him.

At the same time, Xing Ji Dao's limbs formed in the pillar, and a long blue robe swiftly appeared on his body. With his wide shoulders and lean body, he was very attractive to the members of the opposite sex.

The middle-aged man took a step out of the pillar of light. At the instant he did so, the mighty pressure disappeared. It was just as the black-robed old man had said: the mighty pressure from before was due to the power of the World. Once it disappeared, a power that was equivalent to those in Life Realm and Arcane Void Realm in Saint Defier's camp spread out from the middle-aged man's body and started fighting against the black-robed old man's in a subtle but profound manner.

The black-robed old man smiled, and a ray of black light flashed on his body. Needless to say, it was the Light of Extreme Darkness. It might only have appeared briefly, but it was enough to make Xing Ji Dao's eyes shrink.

"Looks like I am still a step too late. The origin of the Light of Extreme Darkness has already been taken, but it seems like you still need to nourish it a little." Xing Ji Dao shook his head and did not bother hiding the regret in his heart. As he spoke, a fierce glare appeared in his eyes.

"Everything in the primitive Arid Triad is still growing, and so foreign treasures that will accompany you for life may appear," the black-robed old man said faintly.

"Then the next time..." A glint appeared in Xing Ji Dao's eyes, and he looked towards the black-robed old man.

"I will let you have it." The black-robed old man smiled faintly.

Xing Ji Dao also did the same. His smile grew wider until he started laughing loudly with the black-robed old man.

"I've finally left Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos. I do like this place with no forms of oppression. We can snatch everything here."

Xing Ji Dao stared at his surroundings, and his expression filled with great emotion. When he raised his right hand, he seized Bai Feng. Her expression changed, but she did not show any resistance. Once Xing Ji Dao grabbed her, he took a sniff of her body.

"The women among these barbarians are also suitable to be made into furnaces, but do not be afraid. I will not turn you into a furnace. You are his, and your Master is mine."

Xing Ji Dao cast a glance at the composed black-robed old man and smiled faintly before letting go of Bai Feng's hand. With a pale face, she swiftly took a few steps back and instinctively stood beside the black-robed old man. Xing Ji Dao's eyes sparkled, and he looked towards Di Tian.

"Fellow Daoist Di Tian, I have come here with Lord Saint Defier's orders to aid you with my full power when you change your Life to become an Abyss Builder. Now, hurry up and place that physical body in Saint Defier's Heaven Penetrating Pillar!"

A brilliant spark shone in Di Tian's eyes. He raised his hand and swung it forward. Immediately, a huge altar appeared with a bang. Lying on it was Su Ming's real physical body!

The instant the altar appeared, it charged towards the pillar of light and fused into it. It floated inside, surrounded by countless rings of light.

Su Ming was hidden in the runic symbol. Even though it was in the black-robed old man's body, it did not affect Su Ming's vision. He saw what happened to Bai Feng, but there was no longer any pain in his heart, only indifference.

That woman no longer had any connection to him. All her paths were chosen by herself. Pursuing the powerful was always a choice made by the weak. There was no right or wrong in it.

Su Ming also saw his real physical body on the altar that fused into the pillar of light. This was the first time he was so close to it!

"I've come with the treasure Lord Ni Sheng specifically created to help you change your Life. It can help you gain extra two-tenths more of a chance to succeed. With my help and Zhang Ji Dao's help, we'll be able to add another tenths of a chance.

"As for the possibility of success, you will have to calculate it yourself, but you still need to make careful preparations. There is a possibility... that you will fail. If that happens, this treasure will make sure that your soul will not be destroyed, but it will mean that you will lose your right to change your Life, and we will search for other people to continue testing this." Xing Ji Dao's expression was stern when he looked at Di Tian.

The white-haired man nodded. His eyes sparkled when he shifted his gaze to the black-robed old man.

The black-robed old man let out a dry cough.

“With my Light of Extreme Darkness guarding your soul, another two-tenths of a chance will be added.”

‘Nearly eight-tenths of a chance to succeed. I have nearly eight-tenths to succeed in changing my Life! Even if their words are slightly exaggerated and I take off two-tenths, there will still be six-tenths of a chance. It’s enough!’ A brilliant light shone in Di Tian’s eyes.

“Heed my words. Lord Saint Defier’s treasure, please fuse the soul into the body, manipulate the heavens to change Life, and overturn the universe!” Xing Ji Dao shouted.

He brought his right hand up. Immediately, a white ring flew off his finger and charged towards the pillar of light.

Chapter 1133: Lord Saint Defier’s Treasure!

The white ring was very thin and did not look like it belonged to a man. Instead, it seemed like it was something a woman would use. When it flew out, it shot into the pillar of light which reached the heavens and went to float above the altar, right on top of Su Ming’s real physical body.

“Lord Saint Defier’s treasure, we ask that you help us!”

A dark light shone in the eyes of Xing Ji Dao, who was dressed in blue. He formed a seal with his right hand and pointed at the ring in the pillar, and it immediately shone with a dazzling light before growing larger, nearly reaching thirty feet.

At the same time, waves of aura that shook the pillar of light were released. They filled the pillar before seeping out. Bai Feng’s expression instantly changed drastically, and she took a few staggering steps back. Shock, the kind of which she had never felt before, showed up on her pale face, but there was also fervent ardor shining in her eyes.

She trembled and immediately knelt down in worship.

As for Di Tian, he was once a Sublime Paragon and a powerful warrior who had surpassed in power the current bodies of the black-robed man and Xing Ji Dao. Even though he could not compare to the real bodies of the two in Saint Defier's camp, he could still put up a fight against them.

When he and Su Xuan Yi had been gravely wounded in the past, his injuries were worse, which made it so he could only retain his soul, and his level of cultivation had also regressed by a lot. But no matter what, he had once been a Sublime Paragon.

Yet under the mighty pressure spreading out from the ring, his expression changed as well. He took a few steps back, and shock appeared in his eyes.

The mighty pressure was filled with an air of supremacy, as if all those under it had to kneel down in worship and bow their heads. All those who dared to struggle would be destroyed.

'Avacaniya! This is definitely Avacaniya's presence! Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos' powerful warrior is in Avacaniya Realm!' Di Tian's breathing quickened. When he moved back, his expression changed, and he chose to kneel down.

The white ring in the pillar of light continued exuding a mighty presence while numerous complicated runic symbols came to surround it. Each of one contained power which could suffocate Su Ming, and when he saw them, he felt as if a door had been opened before him!

It broadened his horizons and had, during that instant, allowed him to see... a cultivator in Avacaniya!

The presence was the strength of something in his memories. When Su Ming searched through them, a figure appeared in his head... an ancient figure standing on an ancient ship which watched all manner of lives bringing offerings to him.

'Old Man Extermination gave off the same feeling. This person's presence means that he's in the same Realm as the Old Man Extermination. This ring came from Saint Defier, so it's Lord Saint Defier's treasure!'

Fervent ardor appeared on Xing Ji Dao's expression, and he immediately knelt down in the direction of the ring. The black-robed old man also swung his arm at the moment he sensed the presence spreading out from the ring and knelt down.

As the presence continued spreading out, gradually, all the cultivators knelt down with shaking hearts.

Slowly but surely, even all the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect who were fighting against those in the Immortals' Union within the territory of the Immortals' Union reacted in the same manner as their enemies. Their hearts trembled, and in shock, they looked

in the direction of the core of the Immortals' Union. Then, they instinctively chose to kneel down and worship the presence.

About a dozen breaths later, the presence spread through the entire True Morning Dao World. In fact, it even affected Morning Dao Sect and shocked countless cultivators. Their bodies trembled, and with humiliation as well as despair, they were forced to kneel down in the direction of the Immortals' Union.

The entire Morning Dao Sect descended into dead silence, with countless cultivators kneeling down in worship.

Only Su Xuan Yi let out a low growl at the instant he sensed the presence while in his isolation grounds within Morning Dao Sect, and a glint of anticipation for something long-awaited shone in his eyes. He slowly stood up under the presence. He raised his right hand and clenched his fist, then threw a punch at the air.

The whole world was silent, but Su Xuan Yi's isolation grounds trembled furiously, like it was about to crumble. However, countless runic symbols immediately appeared in the air, and as they flashed rapidly, they seemed to mend the air.

"This presence still isn't enough... but the first stage is about to be completed. When it reaches completion, I will gain full control of this body, and I will be able to walk out of this place!

"Saint Defier, Dark Dawn, and you Young Little Sublime Paragon, you have all been speculating for a long time, but you could never guess my plans. You could never understand... my madness after my race was destroyed!"

Su Xuan Yi threw his head back and laughed. Ferociousness appeared on his face, and hidden underneath it was a madness that could destroy the universe.

Su Xuan Yi's roar echoed in the isolation grounds, but it did not reach the Immortals' Union or Su Ming's ears. At that moment, he was in the black-robed old man's body. He stared at the white ring in the pillar of light, and a feeling he'd never felt before rose in his heart. It surged in him violently, and his heart seemed to go through a metamorphosis... a metamorphosis of longing for even greater power and becoming the greatest in the world.

'So this is Lord Saint Defier's level of cultivation... I wonder if there will come a day when I will possess this power?!

Su Ming fixed his stare on the white ring while ripples appeared in his divine sense. Yet he did not notice that the bald crane, who had also hidden itself in the black-robed man's body, had started trembling ceaselessly when it saw the white ring. Fond remembrance showed up in its eyes. An indefinable feeling rose within it, as if it was recalling something.

“Fei Hua... how many years has it been? How many years has it been since I left that place? So you... have already taken that step forward and become Lord Saint Defier... Did you use the method I told you in the past? It was a path I discovered based on the calculations from my whole life.

“It was the wrong path, but one that could allow you to become Lord Saint Defier...”

As the bald crane mumbled, it suddenly used its claw to grab hold of its head. “Damn it, I seem to have remembered something again...”

During that moment, numerous cracks appeared on the altar holding Su Ming’s real physical body in the pillar of light. The cracking continued, and more breaks appeared. In the span of a few breaths, the entire altar... melted!

It did not collapse, but melted and became muddy liquid. Waves of faint fragrance spread out from it before turning into fog. It enveloped Su Ming’s real physical body and the ring.

At the same time, the light seeped through the fog and shot through Su Ming’s real physical body as if the ring possessed its own consciousness. Immediately, right before Su Ming’s eyes, his physical body turned transparent.

He could see venous paths in his physical body, and there were vortices packed densely together within them. It looked like the venous paths formed a gigantic, complicated runic symbol and a lock.

To the others, the runic symbol was complicated and profound, but Su Ming felt like he had seen life upon taking a look at it. The runic symbol formed by the venous paths was the Brand of life which belonged to the Abyss Builders, and the lock was clearly something that kept the bloodline safe.

“Paragon Zhang Ji Dao!” the blue-robed Xing Ji Dao said.

Right away, the black-robed old man raised his arms. When he formed a seal, he instantly charged towards the pillar of light with Xing Ji Dao. Once they shot inside, they sat right beside the white ring.

The two of them sucked in a deep breath at the same time before spreading out all of their cultivation bases to fuse into the white ring. Clearly, neither of them was worthy enough to control the ring alone, so the both of them were had to act at the same time. Even so, they they were still faced with great difficulty.

Su Ming’s divine sense rippled. While in the black-robed old man’s body, he sensed the black-robed old man’s cultivation base tumbling about before it charged towards the white ring. A glint appeared in Su Ming’s eyes. He had a strong urge to split a part of his

divine sense to follow after that cultivation base. The urge was incredibly strong, so strong that even if Su Ming wanted to suppress it, he felt a great reluctance to do so.

‘This is Saint Defier’s treasure. This sort of treasure...’ Su Ming’s divine sense rippled violently before he sent out a bit of it towards the white ring along with the black-robed man’s cultivation base.

The bald crane had no idea of how important this matter was during the entire process. Once Su Ming promised it crystals, it immediately stopped thinking about all the jumbled up memories in its mind. Instead, with its full power, it worked to transform Su Ming’s divine sense so that it would appear the exact same as the black-robed old man’s cultivation base.

The thread of divine sense which Su Ming had separated from himself instantly surged into the white ring with the black-robed man’s cultivation base. At the instant it entered the ring, rumbles rang out in Su Ming’s head. He saw a vast world with mountains and rivers as well as countless lifeforms. Yet when he looked closer, he discovered that the lifeforms and even the world itself was formed by various runic symbols. There were so many of them that even Su Ming could not count all of them. There was only one word which could be used to describe the number—countless.

At the instant Su Ming saw the world, he noticed that the white ring was not activated by Xing Ji Dao and the black-robed man. Their levels of cultivation were just like a drop in an ocean compared to the supreme treasure.

However, the injection of their cultivation bases into the ring seemed to have unlocked some sort of seal within it. The action disassembled all the existences formed by runic symbols amid loud rumbles, and they turned into countless runic symbols that danced in the air.

Su Ming watched it full of shock. He had a strong feeling... that there was a path hidden within the runic symbols which he could not understand. Once he managed it, his cultivation base would increase by leaps and bounds. This feeling was incredibly great, and Su Ming’s full attention was fixed on his observations.

Once the entire world turned into countless runic symbols, Xing Ji Dao shouted out, “Di Tian, offer up all the things you’ve prepared in the past... use them to overturn the universe, make the earth turn into the sky, and cause the reversal of time run to its end!”

A light shone in Di Tian’s eyes. He suppressed the strong excitement in his heart and threw his storage bag forward. With a raise of his right hand, the bag opened, and a countless items he had prepared in the course of numerous years flew out.

Chapter 1134: Change for the Worst!!

All of the items were rarely seen things in True Morning Dao World. Each one could tempt countless cultivators and make them go mad. They were so rare that the degree of rarity was would be difficult to describe.

Yet all of them immediately melted into the pillar of light, and it was so quick that their appearances could not even be seen clearly. They turned into liquid and were swiftly absorbed by the white ring.

Di Tian had prepared them for tens of thousands of years. Yet in just about a dozen breaths, all of them turned into liquid and were completely absorbed by the white ring.

Soon after, a piercing white light spread out from the white ring. In a flash, that light spread out in all directions and covered an area of eight hundred million feet, and then, this area in the galaxy... disappeared.

It was described as such because the dark hues of the space in the galaxy had vanished and were replaced by a layer of white light. There was a color to that light, and if a person raised their head to look, they would have a strong feeling that the galaxy had turned into a blue sky!

Su Ming's heart trembled when he saw it, because he was the only one who saw the event in its complete form. In fact, not even the black-robed old man or Xing Ji Dao saw it, because they had only sent their cultivation bases to fuse into the ring. Due to some sort of show of respect, they had not dared to send their divine senses into the ring.

Su Ming saw that once the items Di Tian had prepared for tens of thousands of years melted, they were absorbed by the ring. Their only use was to turn into a power that would gather all the runic symbols.

The act of gathering the countless runic symbols in the world within the ring required a lot of energy. The materials Di Tian had prepared could do so, albeit only for a short moment. The countless runic symbols merged together until there were only three left!

The complexity of the three runic symbols caused Su Ming's divine sense to crumble the moment he saw them. He could not withstand them, but even though his divine sense had crumbled, he had a strong feeling that... all the runic symbols in the world within the ring were formed by the three runic symbols continuously merging with each other.

At the instant the divine sense was destroyed, Su Ming saw one of the three divine senses had sent out the white light to form... the blue sky which stretched out to a circular area of eight hundred million feet beyond the pillar.

The entire sky was in truth... just a runic symbol!

Su Ming's heart trembled. He might have had one sliver of his divine sense destroyed, but without any hesitation, he split up another portion and used the black-robed man's cultivation base to charge straight towards the white ring.

It was a serendipity, a fortuitous event. It was a great serendipitous event that a normal person would find hard to experience under normal circumstances.

Even though Su Ming had come for his real physical body, he would absolutely not give up on this chance. He might not understand the three runic symbols for the moment, but he still wanted to look at them. His instincts were telling him that they were connected to the Avacaniya Realm!

When Su Ming's divine sense entered the white ring again, he saw light spill out from the second runic symbol. Its color was black. At the instant it spread out, it immediately changed the area beneath the blue sky into black earth!

Even though the color was black, it was different from the black hue of space. It was truly earth!

Within the area of eight hundred million feet in the galaxy was a blue sky and dark earth. The place had been changed into a world!

Such a divine ability dazed all the cultivators in the area, but their absent-mindedness did not last for too long. When the light from the third runic symbol spread out, all the people who saw it immediately felt like the world had been overturned.

The blue sky turned into the earth, and the earth changed into the blue sky. Nobody changed position, but the feeling of the world being overturned immediately made all the cultivators nauseous, and their faces went pale.

The world had been overturned!

The power to make the world within eight hundred million feet overturn fell back the next instant. All of it surged back into the pillar at the center and gathered on Su Ming's real physical body.

Boom!

Su Ming's real physical body might still have been transparent, but the venous paths and the runic symbols were trembling and distorting faintly. If they could have been compared to a lock of life previously, then at that moment, that lock was reversing under the power that overturned the world. That lock... opened!

Di Tian watched this from beyond the pillar of light with excitement. He understood the Abyss Builders very well, and he could tell at that moment that the lock on the blood within the Abyss Builder's physical body had been opened!

During that moment, the runic symbol which had turned into the earth changed into the runic symbol of the sky. The invisible runic symbol which overturned the world also seemed to have flashed at the same time. Immediately, booming sounds shook the entire True Morning Dao World.

Su Ming immediately sensed that the three runic symbols were continuously circling each other. Based on some sort of pattern... a power of time which was similar to that of the Abyss Builders spread out from them with a bang.

At the instant the power of time appeared, it spread in all directions. It flowed swiftly, making time flow in reverse, and the effect was clearly seen on Di Tian as well as Bai Feng.

Sometimes, they would appear old, and their presences would instantly gain an even more ancient air. At other times... Di Tian would look young, and Bai Feng even more so. These changes lasted for about a dozen breaths before swiftly coming to a stop!

Time no longer moved, and neither did it flow in reverse. It had stopped completely!

At that instant, the power immediately shrank and gathered on Su Ming's real physical body within the pillar of light. This resulted in everything in the area beyond the pillar to return to normal. Only Su Ming's real physical body was cut off from the time in the area outside, frozen in a state in which time was not moving for it.

At the instant time stopped, Xing Ji Dao's exhausted traveled outwards.

"Di Tian, change your Life now!"

Di Tian threw his head back and roared before he sat down cross-legged. He struck his forehead with his right hand, and immediately, his body started aging with a bang before he was instantly destroyed.

However, at the instant his body was destroyed, his Nascent Divinity flew out, and he started burning in midair. This burning lasted for the span of two breaths before he reached his limit. As his Nascent Divinity burned... a golden soul appeared!

Di Tian had absorbed the power of his physical body so his Nascent Divinity would increase in power exponentially for a short period of time. With the power burning his Nascent Divinity, he also forced out his soul, which had fused with the Nascent Divinity. The golden hue on the soul exuded the great power of Sublime Paragons!

He had used the burning of the physical body and Nascent Divinity for his soul to return to its former level of cultivation. However, this could not last long. Once the time ran out, the damage he'd suffer would be incredibly grave, but it did not matter to him. During that instant, not only did he regain his former level of cultivation, he even showed

improvement. Clearly, even though his level of cultivation in the past years could not match up to his former power, he had gained a lot of epiphanies.

Even the black-robed old man and Xing Ji Dao raised their heads and cast sideways glances at him. Their pupils narrowed slightly.

At that moment, Di Tian's golden soul turned into a golden long arc that shot into the pillar of light connecting to the heavens. With greed in his eyes, Di Tian cast a glance at Su Ming's transparent physical body for which time had been frozen.

It lasted for a brief moment before he moved his soul without any hesitation. In an instant, he rushed into Su Ming's real physical body. When Su Ming saw it, his response was a cold laugh.

Since he could come so close and hide in the black-robed old man's body, then what Su Ming needed to do was at that moment was not to seize his body back before Di Tian. This was not practical. What he needed to do was simple—to make Di Tian fail, and it would be enough.

Once Di Tian failed, Saint Defier would begin the process of searching for another person to go through the Life Changing Art. In the meantime, Su Ming, who had already attached himself to the black-robed old man, would have enough time to easily seize back his real physical body.

In fact, the instant Di Tian's soul fused with Su Ming's real physical body, the black-robed old man helped Su Ming a little. A glint appeared in his eyes, and black light immediately shone on his body.

It was the Light of Extreme Darkness, the one the black-robed old man had promised Di Tian. When he changed his life, he would use it to help him keep his soul steady. The moment the Light of Extreme Darkness appeared, Su Ming immediately gave up on his original plan.

Instead, he had his divine sense leave swiftly with the Light of Extreme Darkness. At the same time Di Tian's soul began to fuse, Su Ming's divine sense... entered his real physical body for the first time ever.

A warm feeling he had never sensed before instantly rose in his heart. He was in the physical body he had desired for a long time. It was his real physical body, which he had craved for even in his dreams. When he was in the land of Berserkers and realized that he was just a soul, he had always dreamed about seizing his physical body back. Even when he was banished to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, that thought had persisted in his heart.

At that moment though, he had come infinitesimally close to his physical body. His divine sense fused with it, and the feeling that he could control the body with ease if he

was given just a little time gave Su Ming an urge to fuse with it regardless of all costs at that instant.

He could sense the venous paths in the physical body. While they were frozen, Di Tian was swiftly spreading his soul over them. Once his soul spread to all of them, he would succeed in changing his Life.

Su Ming forced down the urge in his heart and laughed coldly. He only needed to change a few things, and he could make it so that Di Tian would not succeed, but the instant Su Ming was about to take action, an indescribable sense of danger rose in his heart.

The sense of danger came from his own physical body. Once it reached him, Su Ming also sensed... a hint of unfamiliarity hidden underneath the familiar sensation of his physical body!

The next moment, the bald crane's piercing scream resounded in Su Ming's heart with a hint of anxiety in it. "Something's off! Su Ming, there's something wrong with this physical body!"

"Su Ming! Damn it, this is the One Billion Corpse Soul Seal! It is the incredibly diabolical forbidden Art only the Sacred Lady of Dark Dawn's camp had mastered! Su Ming, this isn't your physical body! This... This... This is a corpse of an Abyss Builder specifically refined by someone using one billion corpses!"

"Retrieve your divine sense! If you're too slow, you'll be doomed for all eternity! Damn it! Just who could possibly be so malicious?! Once this corpse explodes, it can easily destroy an entire True World!"

Chapter 1135: What Is There Left in My Life...?

When the bald crane's piercing scream reverberated in the air, a huge storm of an unprecedented magnitude rose in Su Ming's heart. He was in a state of disbelief, unable to believe it. In fact, in the depths of his heart, he refused to believe it.

He did not want to believe that his physical body... the physical body he had always believed belonged to him... was just a diabolical corpse that someone had created from a billion corpses!

He did not want to believe that Su Xuan Yi knew about this. He did not want to believe... that his real physical body was in such a state!

This completely overturned all the memories Su Ming had and flipped all of his knowledge over its head. Even with Su Ming's composure and intelligence, he fell into a daze at that instant.

He was full of anguish that he had never experienced before. His heart ached with grief and indescribable pain. He felt as if his heart had been dug out, as if everything that he knew had been overturned at that instant.

Ever since he had learned that he was just a soul and that his real physical body was in the land of Immortals, he had treated his desire to retrieve his physical body as the greatest desire in his life.

Yet at that moment... when he was so close to his real physical body, much closer than ever before in his life, the bald crane's words hit him like a sledgehammer. His heart trembled, and he felt... like his soul and Nascent Divinity were about to be torn apart...

"Why... Why?" Su Ming mumbled.

"Hurry up and leave! Damn it! Hurry up and leave that accursed body! IT isn't your body! It's a huge trap someone had laid down! HURRY UP AND LEAVE!!" the bald crane shrieked. In its voice was unprecedented anxiety and hysteria.

However, Su Ming did not seem to have heard its words. He did not leave, because he did not believe any of it. He simply refused to believe that his real physical body could be a lie. The truth that Dark Mountain was a lie had already dealt an incredibly huge blow to him, but as time passed, the wound had slowly recovered, but now...

'If even my real physical body is fake, is there anything real in this world is? Dark Mountain was fake, Bai Ling's love was fake, my childhood friends were all fake... What is real... What is real?!

Su Ming's Nascent Divinity trembled. He could not believe in anything. He... could not bear such a truth. It could be considered to be the strongest blow against him, one that even surpassed what he'd felt when he found out about the Dark Mountain!

However, he had clearly felt the unfamiliar sensation hidden underneath the familiar feeling of his real physical body. It felt like it had been intentionally created and had changed his memories. Because of it, Su Ming had always believed that it was his physical body... He hadn't doubted the truth of it even once!

'Why... just what is the reason behind all of this?!

Su Ming's Nascent Divinity raged. Without caring about the piercing, hysterical warnings from the bald crane, he had his divine sense fuse into his real physical body without regard for anything else. He wanted to find an answer, to find something that would

change what he'd just realized so that he would could relax knowing that nothing was a lie and it was indeed his physical body.

Or rather, Su Ming just wanted to find something which would allow him to lie to himself and willingly shroud himself in the deceit.

However, when Su Ming sent his divine sense inside and touched the core of the physical body, ripples he could not suppress swiftly rose in his divine sense... because he could clearly sense that unfamiliarity hidden under the familiar feeling.

Eventually, Su Ming even found the source which had brought about the familiar feeling. It came from a drop of blood at the core of the physical body. It generated a presence which filled the physical body and made Su Ming feel familiarity towards it.

Su Ming laughed brokenly. With his intelligence, there was no way he would not understand what was going on, but the answer was too brutal, so brutal that even Su Ming could not bear it. At that moment... an exhaustion so great that he could not describe it with words filled his heart. He felt like his heart had already died.

His life had tired him out, but that was not all. All the falsehoods had pushed his exhaustion to its peak a long time ago. If it was not because of his hope for his mother, Su Xuan Yi, whom he did not acknowledge but who still remained in his heart, and having to retrieve his physical body, he... would have long ago closed his eyes and went to sleep.

At that instant though, the subversion of his knowledge, the crushing of his dreams, and all of the falsehoods caused Su Ming to feel as if he had begun crying in his anguish. He was weeping despite not having a physical body. It was his Nascent Divinity and soul crying.

The sadness hidden in his soul came from all the pressure he'd suffered in the course of his life. At that moment, Su Ming felt like the most miserable person in the universe, because it felt like there was no longer a hint of truth in his life.

Deep confusion, anguish, and sorrow turned into self-deprecation. As he ridiculed himself and laughed at his choices, he felt his life fading away while depression welled inside him. The flames of his life became increasingly dimmer.

For the first time in his life, he chose to run away... He chose to close his eyes... and acknowledge his destiny.

He accepted it. If all of it was fake, then he would accept it. Once he did so, he could afford not to be so tired. He could put an end to his laughable life.

Su Ming... acknowledged his destiny.

Even if he had extraordinary power, even if he had incredible willpower, and even if he had experienced many things that normal people would not survive through, he was still alone. In the end, he was a normal person, a person who could get sad and hurt.

“Damn it! Su Ming, do you actually want to die?! Are you going to accept dying here so willingly?! Are you going to give up on Yu Xuan and even stop searching for your senior brothers just like that?! Are you going to accept all of it so willingly??!!”

There was an unprecedented anxiety and grief in the bald crane’s voice. It had traveled with Su Ming all along the way and had conquered all sorts of trials and hardships by his side, even living through numerous dangers with him. Because of that, it could clearly sense Su Ming’s intent to die.

He was not someone walking towards death due to injury, but because of the death of the soul. There was a thick aura of death spreading out from a person’s entire body when he no longer had any desire towards life.

His intent to die terrified the bald crane. It almost made it remember the person who had been incredibly important to it in its earlier life. In the end, her wish for death had filled her whole body, and the bald crane could only watch helplessly as she gradually lost consciousness, then slowly... turned into a statue.

Like that, she ended her life, removed all signs of her life in the world, and extinguished... the brand of her life.

“Su Ming, is this worth it?! Is it worth it?! If you want to die, then you should go fight till you die against your enemies, and I would die along with you in battle!

“But how do you dare to give up on your life and everything else in this place?! Have you forgotten about Yu Xuan?!”

Su Ming’s gradually fading life seemed to throb a little at that instant.

“Without you, who will protect Yu Xuan?! Don’t you know that the damned Su Xuan Yi will continue using Yu Xuan?! Is that fine with you?! If you’re no longer around, what is she supposed to do?! I’m absolutely positive that she will die as well to be with you!!”

Su Ming’s heart started throbbing again.

“What about your third senior brother?! Have you forgotten about him?? If Hu Zi learned that you died, how sad would he be?! He’d go mad and overturn the world so that he could create a dream in which you existed!

“Because you’re his junior brother!!

“What about your second senior brother?! Have you forgotten about him?? Darn it all, Su Ming, if you died, then what would happen to your second senior brother?! He’d go mad! He’d be sad, and it’d be the worst pain he’d have to suffer in his life!!

“Because you’re his junior brother!!

“What about your eldest senior brother?! Have you forgotten about him?? He no longer has a head, so do you want him to lose his heart as well?!

“Su Ming, you damned fool! Don’t you want to know all the answers about this place?! Don’t you want to search for the person who has been manipulating your life?! You can’t die here, you coward, you bastard! You coward, you’re giving up on them, and you’re giving up on me! Y-Y-You... If you really want to die, then I will die with you!!” the bald crane screamed.

There was deep sadness in its eyes, and its words continuously traveled into Su Ming’s heart. Because of them, his heart began beating more vigorously.

And it continued... until the intent to die affecting his life was replaced by a great wave of madness and a will that hated the heavens, the earth, and everything in the universe!

“That’s right, that’s exactly it! You have to learn the truth about everything! You have to kill until everything in the universe is dyed red! Kill until you become the Paragon of Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos! Kill until you bring forth a madness that will cause Saint Defier and Dark Dawn to fear you and retreat!!

“Su Ming, you... cannot die!!”

Su Ming’s Nascent Divinity descended into pure madness at that moment. His divine sense roared as if there was a huge wave surging in him. His desire to die was replaced by madness. He had previously closed his eyes, but a will like that of rebirth made him swiftly open them

His soul also seemed to have been reborn at that moment. It seemed to have woken up... like it had gone through a metamorphosis while passing through hell!!

The waves of intense pain in Su Ming’s soul caused his madness to become even stronger. He no longer cared about the pain of his soul being torn apart. Since he had opened his eyes, he would proceed to rise to power despite all the pain.

Su Ming saw his soul shattering from the intense pain. When it did so, a scene that had been hidden inside it and was something that he was not supposed to see in his life rose before Su Ming’s eyes.

He saw a chaotic galaxy in which countless people were fighting against each in a corpse-filled battlefield. Hundreds of people exuding the presence of those in Life

Realm and some even with the presence of Death Realm were attacking a middle-aged man with black hair.

He held a baby in one arm while in his other was a long blade. There were hundreds of corpses around him, and each of one was a formerly powerful warriors above Life Realm. In fact, some of them even belonged to those in Death Realm!

There was an awe-inspiring, righteous air about the middle-aged man, along with a will that screamed that he would not submit even if the entire universe collapsed. As he killed, he threw his head back and laughed, long and hard. There were numerous wounds on his body. His cultivation base was rapidly growing weaker, but his presence was filled with fevered fighting spirit!

Chapter 1136: The Gap in Arid Triad!

The middle-aged man's fighting spirit shocked the powerful warriors around him, and without even knowing it, they began feeling respect.

"Ming Er, you could have had a good life, because I am your father. I am only an ordinary Abyss Builder, but my existence is one even the royal family has to respect! If this hadn't happened, you would have been brought up and taught by me, eventually surpassing me and even the royal children. You were to be my son, Su Zhan's son, whom even the Abyss Builders' Progenitor has to regard with great importance!!

"But now you will have a bad life, because you are my son, because you will die with me in this battle. Are you afraid?!"

The middle-aged man threw his head back and laughed. He swung the long blade in his hand, and an indescribable, domineering power erupted from it with a bang. It beheaded an Almighty in Life Realm and destroyed his Nascent Divinity. The man's blood gushed outwards and landed on the baby's face.

The baby extended his tongue, and as if he was sucking on milk, he drank the blood. He even giggled happily.

"Now that's my son. As expected of the son I've sired after sneaking into Dark Dawn and seizing your mother, who belongs to the sacred bloodline of the Essences in Dark Dawn. It doesn't matter whether she was willing or not, in the end, she gave birth to you!

"But you... truly do not have a good life..." The middle-aged man lowered his head and stared at the baby in his arms. There was kindness in his domineering gaze as well as sadness.

Booming sounds reverberated in space, and the slaughter continued. Su Ming simply watched everything before his eyes while staring at the tall and built middle-aged man. He... was not Su Xuan Yi, but a stranger who had never appeared before in Su Ming's memories.

However, this stranger gave him a feeling that made his soul tremble. It gave him... a feeling that he was that baby who was giggling while licking his enemy's blood.

Booming sounds reverberated in the air once more. The scene continued until Su Ming saw everything turn into dazzling fireworks in the galaxy. They were lit by a single life releasing everything within it and drowning everyone out...

Even the man and the baby in his arms turned into nothingness in the dazzling fireworks. There were only a few words which still echoed quietly in the galaxy.

"Ming Er, if we can be born again, then I'd like to still be your father. If we are born again, I will teach you the paths of cultivation. I will... bring you along while I travel through the universe. I will... love you with my whole being, because you are my son. Even if I die, you must remember, your father's name is Su Zhan!"

"As for that convenient mother of yours... Perhaps she'll shed tears when she knows I died, but perhaps she won't... No matter what, I, Su Zhan, have no guilt towards the heavens, the earth, my people, and my best friend!"

The scene ended, and a tear tore Su Ming's soul apart. Intense pain shot through his body and mind, but he no longer cared about it, because he saw another memory which had clearly been sealed. It also had the same galaxy filled with corpses. After an unknown number of years had passed, a person walked into it...

He was Su Xuan Yi!

He moved quietly forward in the galaxy filled with death. He stood there for a long, long time, and sadness appeared in his eyes. The moment he was about to turn around and leave, he let out a gasp of surprise. When he raised his hand, he seized a weak soul from the galaxy.

It was a baby's soul, protected by his father when he died. Due to the mysterious qualities of his mother's race, he'd remained a broken soul still struggling to survive in the barren battlefield!

Su Ming saw Su Xuan Yi stare at that soul for a long, long time before he mumbled, "Su Zhan, you lured away our pursuers so that I could leave smoothly with my wife... You knew that I would one day come to this place, which is why you self-destructed and protected your child. Then, from now onwards, this child will be my son."

Su Xuan Yi's voice was soft. When he turned around, he left the galaxy with all the corpses belonging to his enemies, his allies from the Fifth True World as well as... a drop of blood which was pressed at the center of the baby's brows.

"Your father sacrificed himself to protect his race. You... will sacrifice yourself to do what your father did not manage to complete. You will make our race rise to power. Are you willing to do so?"

Su Xuan stared at the fragile soul in his hand while speaking softly. However, there was a hint of a cold madness in his words. The baby's soul seemed to sense something horrifying, and it trembled while looking on the verge of dissipating.

"You will be."

Su Xuan Yi brought his right hand up, and with a hint of cruelty, he yanked the blood from the baby's soul. He then turned around and left into the distance.

When another scene appeared, Su Ming saw a beautiful and gentle woman. She stared at him blankly with pain on her face.

"I won't agree to this. Su Zhan died in battle for our sakes. We can't—"

An aloof voice cut off the woman's words."This is my choice. Su Zhan died for our race, and he died a worthy death!"

"He did not die for our people. He died so that we could leave. With his cultivation base, he could have taken his son and fled without any problems. We can't do this to his son. He was Su Zhan's son, but from now on, he will be my son!"

"If we don't do this, then our own son will die! If we compare my blood to Su Zhan's, then it is already considered a great honor for this broken soul to have the right to help us! If Su Zhan was still alive, he would definitely agree to this as well!"

"You're mad, Su Xuan Yi! You're mad!"

The scene disappeared, and when another appeared, the baby was held in the woman's arms while they drifted in the vast galaxy. The woman's aura was weak, and she was already on the brink of death. Tears fell from her eyes when she looked at the baby..

"I'm sorry... I'm sorry... If there comes a day when you learn the truth behind everything, you can blame me, but please, spare my son. I'm truly... sorry..."

"Our entire family has wronged your father, and even more so, we have wronged you... Su Ming, my son..."

The scenes ended in Su Ming's mind at that point. His soul no longer ached in pain, and there was no longer any confusion in his mind. Madness made the pain irrelevant, and his previous confusion was meaningless.

He only smiled. It was an expression filled with madness that longed to destroy everything. His smile was no longer one of self-deprecation, but an aloof one which would terrify anyone who saw it.

Laughter echoed in his Nascent Divinity at that moment.

It was filled with a forlorn tone as well as hate that surged into the heavens!

"Sorry, huh?"

Su Ming moved his divine sense and swept up the bald crane. By the time Di Tian succeeded in refining the physical body created by one billion corpses, Su Ming's divine sense had left and returned to the white ring and back to the black-robed old man's body.

Moments later, all the veins in the physical body started shining with a dazzling light. When it opened its eyes, a brilliant light shone in them—it had already come into Di Tian's possession.

Happiness and excitement appeared on Di Tian's face. He slowly sat up, and when he threw his head back to laugh, the black-robed old man and Xing Ji Dao smiled faintly.

Bai Feng, too, saw this scene beyond the pillar of light, and eager anticipation appeared in her eyes.

Yet at that moment, a brilliant light spread out from the white ring. When it shone, a strong sense of danger rose in Xing Ji Dao and the black-robed old man's hearts.

Di Tian's laughter came to an abrupt halt. He swiftly lowered his head to look at his body, and disbelief as well as shock showed up in his eyes. Countless faces appeared on his body in a manner as if his body was melting. The faces were packed densely together, making it impossible to calculate just how many of them were in total.

A presence powerful enough to destroy an entire True World erupted from his body, and it was so strong that Di Tian's expression changed drastically, and Xing Ji Dao's pupils shrank.

"Something's wrong with this corpse. This-this is—"

"This is the Forbidden Art of Dark Dawn's Dark Chamber, One Billion Corpse Soul Seal!" the black-robed old man shouted loudly. His expression twisted, and disbelief as well as shock appeared in his eyes. His voice had even started quivering at that instant.

“THIS IS THE ONE BILLION CORPSE SOUL SEAL!!!”

When the black-robed old man instinctively repeated himself, he started screaming shrilly, then swiftly rushed away. Shock was on his face along with fear that had never been seen on him before.

Xing Ji Dao shuddered violently and let out a roar filled with despair, then moved to leave the pillar of light as well.

Yet during that moment, while the destructive power spread out, the physical body Di Tian had just mastered let out a loud bang which shook the entire True Morning Dao World.

At the instant this loud bang shot out, Di Tian let out a shrill scream of pain. He wanted to leave the body regardless of the cost, but he found that it was impossible. As he screamed, an indescribable hate seeped into his voice!

“SU XUAN YI!!!”

It was Di Tian’s last cry in his life, the final words belonging to the most formidable man of his generation, the Sublime Paragon whose level of cultivation had shocked the world and who had fought against Su Xuan Yi for tens of thousands of years.

His voice was instantly drowned out by the booming sounds. Amid them, the body he had just gained control of exploded. The explosion from one billion bodies and the collapse of Dark Dawn’s Forbidden Art brought forth a power that surpassed even what Sublime Paragons could use. In fact... no one could say whether it possessed a power close to those in Avacaniya Realm or whether it had surpassed even that. No one knew the full power of the first stage of Su Xuan Yi’s plan, which he had prepared for countless years!

It was an explosion which could destroy an entire True World, a madness triggered by Di Tian, who had personally refined it with the help of Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos. Its collapse could destroy all the lives in True Morning Dao World and even the planets and the entire galaxy. After it, there would no longer be any True Morning Dao World among the four Great True Worlds. From then on, there would only be three Great True Worlds!

And that power which could destroy an entire True World was gathered within the pillar of light, which it was about to tear apart. At that moment, the pillar became the one and only gap leading from within Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos to the universe beyond, and it was something which had never appeared before in this Expanse Cosmos.

The appearance of this gap could allow a large number of cultivators from Saint Defier to descend. Their levels of cultivation would not be limited, and neither would they need to rebuild their bodies. In fact, besides those in Avacaniya Realm, no one else would be

affected no matter how strong they were. All of them could descend with their complete power in large numbers.

The gates to hell had been opened. This... was Su Xuan Yi's plan, because once such a gap showed up, Dark Dawn, who had their previous Relocation path destroyed by Su Xuan Yi using Su Ming's hand and who had been preparing a new Relocation path, would be forced to give up on all their preparations... They would have to attack Saint Defier at full force so that they could seize the gap in the shortest amount of time possible.

After all, they could not allow Saint Defier to enjoy the benefits by itself. If one camp completely occupied Arid Triad, they would be able to destroy all existences within the other camp.

The first stage of Su Xuan Yi's plan was to ignite the war between Dark Dawn and Saint Defier so it would reach its peak in an instant and become more frenzied than ever before in their history.

Chapter 1137: Possession!

This was directed outwards...

And the attack directed inwards...

At the instant Su Ming's divine sense returned to the black-robed old man who was about to rush out of the pillar with fear and disbelief, Su Ming sensed great danger.

It did not come from the physical body which he had believed belonged to him, but... from his Nascent Divinity's right hand!

Su Ming's right hand, the one which could allow him to release power surpassing his level of cultivation, gave off ripples which could endanger his life. It did not choose to self-destruct like his physical body, but instead... it had started melting, turning into an energy source that nourished... the Seed of Life Extermination!

This might not cause direct harm to Su Ming, but it could change the Seed of Life Extermination's parasitic relationship with his soul. From mere absorption, it could turn into an incomparably violent and blatant pilferage.

This would not last long. When the Seed of Life Extermination was close to ripening, it would use a short period of madness to instantly complete the entire process.

“Su Xuan Yi... what a man you are. I don't know whether you have any follow ups to your plan, but by the looks of it, this is still part of it. To the world outside, you showed the souls of one billion corpses exploding to destroy the pillar and overturn Saint Defier as well as Dark Dawn, while underneath this plan... you hide the fact that you're using my soul to nourish the Seed of Life Extermination. Only half of it has formed because I am not your son. I am only nourishment to restore your real son!

“If I hadn't seen the sealed memories, then perhaps even at my last moment I would have not known the reason for my death...”

Su Ming fell silent. He understood everything now. His fake physical body was an item used by Su Xuan Yi to further his goals, and his soul was clearly the same. It was an object entangled in the man's numerous schemes.

But Su Ming still remained silent. Even though he had come to understand everything, he wanted to know whether Su Xuan Yi intended... to utterly annihilate him in his plan.

Did he still have other tasks for Su Ming after using him this time, or was Su Xuan Yi going to cast him away after he lost his purpose once his soul was used to nourish the Seed of Life Extermination until it fully matured?

This question was incredibly important to Su Ming.

He wanted to know the answer.

And it was not hard to find that out. When Su Ming saw the right hand melt and the Seed of Life Extermination descend into a frenzied state before gradually burning his soul, he knew his answer. The seed seemed to be persecuting him, even burning his soul just so it could reach maturity.

His lips curled up into a smile while he shook his head. There was an air of a person being freed from all their shackles in that smile. Su Ming seemed to be bidding farewell to his past as well as finally growing up from a child he'd been for so long.

At that moment, Su Ming looked like he had truly grown up. All his emotions came to a single point that cut him off from his past. After all, he was supposed to die there, because of the Seed of Life Extermination buried in his soul as well as Su Xuan Yi's plan.

“From now on, the Su Ming you speak of has died... The person who will appear from now on in this world will be a new person, a ruthless and unfeeling person...” Su Ming mumbled.

The moment the destructive power erupted from the body he once believed was his, it disintegrated with a bang, and Su Ming... chose Possession.

He would Possess the black-robed old man, and he would be born anew when he Possessed his physical body.

“Su Xuan Yi, you’ve kept a broken soul like me alive up to this moment. Even though you’ve only done so to have my soul nourish the Seed of Life Extermination, this is still a kindness towards me.

“You let me grow from that weak, broken soul to this date. If you weren’t around, I would have disintegrated a long time ago. I will never forget this kindness you’ve given to me.

“If you want to have my soul to make this half of the Seed of Life Extermination mature... why should I hesitate in giving it to you?!”

The moment Su Ming chose to Possess the black-robed old man, he let go of many things, just like a phoenix rising from the ashes.

Rumbling sounds rang out. They were so loud that they resounded at an unprecedented volume. That sound spread through the entire True Morning Dao World, and even went to the galaxy belonging to Saint Defier’s camp through the gap where the pillar once was.

As the rumbles echoed in the galaxy, Di Tian’s will was wiped off, and a destructive force which could collapse True Morning Dao World was brought forth. The destruction did not affect the area beyond the pillar of light, however. Instead, it charged straight into Saint Defier’s galaxy through the gap.

The space in True Morning Dao World was torn apart by the destructive force, and a huge tear was formed. Countless screams of pain traveled down from the other side. Those screams were from the people controlling the Heaven Penetrating Pillar in Saint Defier’s camp dying all at once.

The moment the power which could destroy a True World erupted, the pillar of light... shattered with a bang. Countless fragments fell back, cutting space. It tore apart the galaxy, but most of the power rose continuously into the gap, tearing it wider.

Xing Ji Dao, one of the Eight Paramount Daos of Saint Defier who had just descended and who was a powerful existence with a great level of cultivation as well as a high status in Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos, almost disintegrated once the destructive power erupted. Only his Nascent Divinity managed to escape. With a fearful expression, he charged forward through the destructive force. While enduring waves of terrifying damage, he had only one thought in his mind—Run!

Fortunately, he still had the white ring with him. The supreme treasure from Saint Defier was the only item which could fight against the destructive force.

With the greatest speed he could muster, Xing Ji Dao dashed into the white ring while swamped by fear. He watched the pillar of light beyond the ring shatter and the huge gap being created in the heavens high above the pillar. He knew that it led to Saint Defier's camp and heard countless shrill screams of pain. He trembled, and disbelief appeared in his eyes.

"They're mad, these people from Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos are all mad! This is a scheme, Dark Dawn's scheme!"

When this event in True Morning Dao World whose after effects could even be felt in the remaining three True Worlds, the black-robed old man let out a shrill scream of pain. As his body shuddered, madness appeared on his face. It was very clear, and it looked like he was fighting against something trying to Possess his body from within.

His robes had long ago been torn, revealing an old face and a thin body. He had countless injuries, and blood spilled out from him before it was reduced to nothingness.

However, all of this was insignificant compared to the fear he felt in his heart at that moment. It originally came from Di Tian's body self-destructing, but that had only lasted for an instant. His fear changed targets the instant he sensed someone Possessing him from within his body.

The strange power had appeared without a single sound, having hidden away from his senses. In fact, only when most of his body had been Possessed did the black-robed old man suddenly realize the unfamiliar presence. The shock and terror this discovery brought to him instantly reached the peak.

Yet even when the black-robed old man cast his gaze on the power Possessing him, he had no idea who the other was and why they would want to Possess him from within instead of the general trend of Possessing forcefully from the outside world.

The timing was also so impeccable that it was terrifying. It began when the black-robed old man fought back against the destruction of the world around him with all his strength, which meant he had no spare energy to watch within himself. At that moment, the power had appeared like a bolt of lightning and instantly began Possessing him.

The Light of Extreme Darkness shone brightly around him and moved with him towards the white ring. He approached it in no time. The moment he rushed in, the eyes hidden under the Light of Extreme Darkness were no longer filled with madness, but had turned into aloof and as cold as ice.

At that moment, the old man was no longer Zhang Ji Dao, one of Saint Defier's Eight Paramount Daos, but... the reborn Su Ming!

The speed of his Possession this time was unprecedented. After all, the current Su Ming was incredibly powerful. Besides, his soul had started burning due to the

stimulation provided by the melting of his right hand. This sped up Su Ming's speed in Possession, and since he had hidden himself in the black-robed man's body at the start, his Possession had become even faster.

Besides, since Su Ming's timing had been impeccable, it meant that before the black-robed old man could even notice him, Su Ming had already Possessed most of his body. Because of it, Su Ming managed to complete the Possession in a few breaths. He had also devoured the black-robed man's soul in one fell swoop.

The power of his soul instantly fused with Su Ming's soul to serve as nourishment. Once the Seed of Life Extermination devoured Su Ming's soul, the black-robed man's soul would replenish it.

"Damn it, what's going on?! Zhang Ji Dao, what's the meaning of this!" Xing Ji Dao's Nascent Divinity trembled. When he saw Su Ming rush into the white ring, he immediately questioned him while lifting his head to look at the huge gap in space which had been formed when the pillar of light had shattered.

"This is Su Xuan Yi's plan," Su Ming answered in a raspy voice. While hidden under the Light of Extreme Darkness, he stared at Xing Ji Dao. His gaze was that of a hunter staring at a prey.

Waves of power from the World turned into whirlwinds that spilled out from the gap. They swept out in all directions, and since it was their first outburst in countless years, they instantly filled a small portion of True Morning Dao World.

No one knew how long the power of the World would continue rampaging in the galaxy, but once it weakened, Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos would descend en masse. Before that could happen though, Dark Dawn would definitely launch a heinous massacre beyond Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos to fight against Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos for the only gap which would allow them to descend into Arid Triad!

As the power of the World swept about the galaxy in a wild rampage beyond the white ring, invisible whirlwinds destroyed everything. Countless cultivators from the Immortal's Union died straight away. Their sects were also instantly reduced to nothing.

Bai Feng was the closest to the attack. By then, she had already coughed up an unknown amount of blood. Her face was pale, but there was a huge cocoon encasing her. It was crimson, like the egg of a fire phoenix, and it was one of the Ultimate Protection Arts in Phoenix Sect. It could be used only once in their lives, the Phoenix Art Cocoon!

At that instant, all those in the Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos who were capable of noticing what happened in True Morning Dao World were shocked. In truth though, even those who did not notice felt an abnormality in the galaxy, and all of their hearts trembled. A mighty pressure descended, traumatizing them.

Chapter 1138: Another Possession!

The whirlwinds formed by the power of the World swept outwards from the spot which was once the core of the territory belonging to the Immortals' Union. As it tumbled outwards, piercing whistles rushed out in all directions at an even faster speed.

The place was described as the spot formerly belonging to the Immortals' Union because it had now been reduced to complete ruin. Countless Immortals had died, numerous planets were shattered, and an innumerable number of sects were instantly destroyed. However, all of this had yet to reach the degree at which it would threaten to destroy an entire True World. After all, it was not the damage caused by the explosion brought by the One Billion Corpse Soul Seal wreaking havoc, but the power of the World between Saint Defier and Arid Triad spilling forward.

Even so, it was still a great disaster to True Morning Dao World. And there was an even greater disaster waiting for them—the huge gap in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, which had been created by the power of the One Billion Corpse Soul Seal which could destroy a True World.

The gap was like a newly cracked hole in a huge egg that was still some time away from hatching. The the power which was being formed to give birth to a dragon of the heavens had begun flowing outwards. At the same time, due to a large amount of aura from the worlds beyond surging in, signs of erosion appeared in the space around the gap.

There might have been only a few at the start, but more and more of them appeared without stop. Perhaps this process would need a certain amount of time, but in the end Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos would lose its right to become the third camp standing on equal ground with Saint Defier and Dark Dawn!

If Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos had life and could feel pain, it would be experiencing an indescribably intense pain while sensing its life flowing away.

Then, it would spread its pain to all the lives born in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos.

The Predecessor of Dao Ocean tumbled about in Morning Dao Sect while letting out a pained cry. The countless planets in the galaxies which had yet to be affected by the whirlwinds formed by the power of the World in True Morning Dao World started trembling, and countless living beings within them howled in pain. They sensed their lives flowing out of their bodies. Intense pain came with it, and they felt like their bodies and even souls had lost a precious part of them.

All lives behaved in such a manner, including the cultivators. It did not matter whether they were cultivators from the Immortals' Union or disciples from Morning Dao Sect. All of them sensed the intense pain and felt their lives seeping out of their bodies. Right away, their hearts filled with indescribable terror.

It was as if the universe... had become different from before, like a crack had appeared in an invisible barrier which had protected them without their knowledge.

True Morning Dao World was not the only one affected. The same scene could be observed in within True Sacred Yin World as well. All the cultivators there felt like their spirits were about to be torn apart, and the tremors from all the planets made True Sacred Yin World fall into complete chaos for a period of time.

At the same time, all the powerful warriors in True Sacred Yin World, especially those who were in Fate Realm and above, as well as the Kalpa Lord along with the Sublime Paragon, sensed all what had happened.

There were five mountains floating in space in the galaxy. They shone in five different colors whose light was very piercing. At the centermost mountain was a middle-aged man. While standing quietly at the top, he raised his head to look at the endless universe. At the same time, a dreary expression appeared on his face, followed by a hint of shock.

"I can sense... a huge gap being torn open in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, right where True Morning Dao World is... The power protecting Arid Triad does not exist in that gap..."

"You can sense this because you are connected to True Morning Dao World. What you sense is what True Sacred Yin World understands," a faint voice said. The air distorted, and a child in red clothes walked out to stand beside the middle-aged man.

The child looked incredibly young, but there was an unimaginably ancient air to him. If anyone looked into his eyes, they would lose themselves.

"Lord Sublime Paragon." The middle-aged man cast the boy a glance, then wrapped his fist in his palm before bowing slightly to him.

"Many years ago, I sensed that the Sublime Paragon of True Morning Dao World had become incredibly weak. He disappeared the next second, hiding himself away.

"Just now, I sensed his presence again, but it only lasted for an instant before it disappeared once more. At the same time, I sensed... a destructive power that not even I would dare touch coming from True Morning Dao World.

“It could easily destroy Sublime Paragons like me, and it could even destroy a True World!” The boy stared in the direction of True Morning Dao World while speaking calmly.

His words immediately caused the middle-aged man’s expression to change.

“This destructive power that terrifies even me did not shatter True Morning Dao World, but instead opened a gap to Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos...”

A complicated expression appeared on the boy’s face. In fact, even with his level of cultivation, he could not suppress the great anxiety which had appeared on his face at that moment.

“Send the order to all in True Sacred Yin World to prepare for war and bring forth all their strongest equipment. Have the cultivators in all True Worlds... prepare for a great war the kind of which we have never experienced before!

“War is about to start, and it will be of an intensity we have never seen before. Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos will fight against those from beyond! Be prepared to die in this battle. Even I will most likely die in this war, so it is even more like for other cultivators. Be prepared... for True Sacred Yin World to be completely destroyed.

“War...” the boy said softly.

The middle-aged man beside him had already started breathing rapidly. His pupils shrank, and if it was not because of his respect for the boy and knowledge of the other’s status, he would have not believed anything he just said.

Yet those were the words of True Sacred Yin World’s Sublime Paragon. And he even said that he would probably die himself too. This caused the middle-aged man, the Kalpa Lord of True Sacred Yin World, to feel an indescribable terror.

The same scene could be seen in the Emperor of Abyss’ True World. The planets trembled and the cultivators sensed fear and intense pain; however, the person with the greatest influence besides the Sublime Paragon of the Emperor of Abyss’ True World, the Emperor of Abyss, was incredibly quiet.

In a world existing in an unknown region within the Emperor of Abyss’ True World was a lavish palace which towered into the skies. It had a window, and standing beside it was a person.

He had his hands behind his back as he stared outside. Sunlight scattered all over the place, making it impossible to see his face.

He stood beside the window quietly and watched the universe roar. The cultivators within the True World were panicking... but there seemed to be a hint of a smile on the man's face.

"Lord Sublime Paragon is about to return. The second stage is about to start," the man murmured in a barely discernible volume. His words were faint, disappearing into the sunlight beyond the window.

True Spirit Hell World, the Fourth True World, was the most mysterious of the four True Worlds, and its name was known only by a select few who were worthy. The instant the gap connecting to Saint Defier's camp was torn in True Morning Dao World, countless shrill screams reverberated in the Fourth True World.

The came from all regions. Once they joined into one loud roar, the whole world shook..

The screams came from pain as well as a sort of madness...

However, there were cultivators within each region of the Fourth True World who did not make a single sound. Their faces were pale, but they remained aloof.

There were plenty of such cultivators in each region, and they all wore uniform clothes. Once the roars reverberated through the True World, they immediately started trembling, and a grim expression they had never showed before appeared on their faces.

"There is a gap in Arid Triad. Release me! Release me now! I'm willing to fight for Arid Triad!"

"Haha, a gap appeared in Arid Triad! I can sense Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos' pain. All of you will die. All of you will die..."

"This is the presence of the power of the World. There's also the presence of those damned cultivators from the worlds beyond. All of you of the damned later generation shall die a million times for your crimes. Look at the Expanse Cosmos we gave you because we felt at ease handing it to you. Open the Spirit Hell and let us out!"

Various roars reverberated in space, and there was an incredibly mighty power contained in each voice. They were so terrifying that most of the cultivators protecting the True World coughed up blood as their hearts trembled.

"Seniors, please calm down. Without the orders from at least two Sublime Paragons from the other three True Worlds' Sublime Paragons and Kalpa Lords, it is impossible for us to open the Spirit Hell and let you out.

"Even if a disaster which Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos cannot withstand has appeared, it has nothing to do with Spirit Hell. Seniors, please be quiet," an old, aloof voice said. It

could be heard in all of the Fourth True World, but his only response were even stronger roars than before.

However, no matter how much the prisoners shouted, the cultivators protecting the place did not say a single word. Even the ancient voice from before did not say anything.

In the meantime, the whirlwind formed by the power of the World continued sweeping outwards through True Morning Dao World. The spot where the pillar of light connecting to the heavens once existed was the spot where the whirlwind had originated. Bai Feng's cocoon was being weakened by the wind formed by the power of the World. From the looks of it, it would only be able to last for dozen more breaths before shattering.

Not far from the cocoon was a white light. It came from the white ring, the supreme treasure from Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos. At that moment, the ring was slowly rising into the sky. Judging by the looks of it, it was about to stand up against the power of the World and force its way back into Saint Defier's camp through the gap.

"Zhang Ji Dao, we have to leave this accursed place as soon as possible. We have to tell the three Lord Saint Defiers that Dark Dawn has prepared such a treachery in this accursed place.

"You have to help me. We... absolutely can't stay here. Before long, numerous cultivators from Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos will be led here. The both of us must not let Lord Saint Defier's supreme treasure be snatched away!" Xing Ji Dao roared in the white ring. Even the eyes of his Nascent Divinity were bloodshot as he used his full power to control the white ring.

The eyes of the black-robed old man, who had been Possessed by Su Ming, flashed briefly. He nodded and raised his arms to send his cultivation base to fuse with the white ring.

It immediately lightened Xing Ji Dao's burden, but the instant he relaxed his guard, he sensed great danger, and his expression changed drastically.

"Zhang Ji Dao... what... what are you doing?!"

Chapter 1139: Morning Dao Sect's Disaster!

Su Ming was skilled in reading the changes in his opponents' thoughts and taking control of the weaknesses that came from their emotions. This was something which had already showed itself when he was hunting in Dark Mountain.

Since then, a thousand years had passed, and he had become even more proficient at it. His experiences had made his intelligence grow incredibly quickly. When Xing Ji Dao was shocked by the things happening around him and wanted to leave Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos as quickly as possible, why Su Ming used this to his benefit. He first offered help and activated the white ring so that his enemy would relax his guard.

At the instant that happened, Su Ming sent out his Nascent Divinity and soul without any hesitation. He attacked so fast that Xing Ji Dao did not have time to fend against him. If this had happened at any other time, he definitely would not have been in such a state. However, his heart was shaken by the things around him, like the completion of Su Xuan Yi's crazy plan. He was also fully invested in escaping, which was why he showed a weakness that he would never show under normal circumstances.

"You're not Zhang Ji Dao!!" Xing Ji Dao growled.

His physical body had been damaged, but the great cultivation base within his soul kept him strong. There was a reason behind why Su Ming could Possess the black-robed old man in just a few breaths, but when it came to Xing Ji Dao, it was not so easy.

However, Su Ming still chose to Possess him. If being accurate, however, it was not Possession just for the sake of itself. He was pushed by the Seed of Life Extermination devouring him.

The instant Su Ming's soul rushed into Xing Ji Dao's Nascent Divinity and the man's roar reverberated in space, he lost control of the white ring. The whirlwind of the power of the World immediately started sweeping towards them.

When Su Ming made his choice, waves of power of the World surged in. They might not be able to destroy a supreme treasure like the white ring, it could destroy Xing Ji Dao and Su Ming who were within it.

"It doesn't matter who you are, but without us controlling the supreme treasure, we will both die! Damn it, are you mad?!" The moment Xing Ji Dao's terrified voice rang out, it was completely drowned out by the loud rumbles caused by the power of the World surging inside.

When the white ring was dragged into the tornado, loud whistles reverberated in space. No one knew that there was a crazed Possession and devouring going on there at that moment.

Su Ming was no longer his past self. At that moment, he was like someone who had risen from the ashes. He was going to pursue his new life, and this life would require

him to get rid of the Seed of Life Extermination. Only by doing so would he cut off the final connection between him and Su Xuan Yi.

The moment he did so, he would also make Su Xuan Yi think that his body and soul had been destroyed, and that he had turned into nutrients to make the Seed of Life Extermination grow.

To do this, Su Ming needed to Possess Mighties like Xing Ji Dao and devour their souls to replenish the life force absorbed by the Seed of Life Extermination.

That was why even though it was incredibly difficult and there were great dangers in attempting it he had to do it. If he did not, he would not be able to separate himself from the Seed of Life Extermination and run away from the destiny of his body and soul being destroyed. Because of it, there was really no other option for Su Ming.

He had to devour them, and he had to succeed. This was the only thought in Su Ming's mind the moment he rushed into Xing Ji Dao's body.

The whirlwind of the power of the World roared and enveloped everything in the area. The white cocoon not too far away was being weakened layer by layer while a woman inside it was hugging herself. As she shivered, helplessness and despair appeared on her face.

Everything around her was in ruins. There was nothing else beside the whirlwind. The entire True Morning Dao World had been reduced to a wreckage.

Fear was on the faces of all cultivators in Morning Dao Sect. All the Relocation Runes connected to Morning Dao Sect were destroyed completely by the whirlwind, separating this True World from the world outside. No one could venture out, and no outsider could get in.

The violent whirlwind rushed around the area beyond Morning Dao Sect. All the cultivators who tried to leave with any method they could think of had their flesh and blood torn off as they screamed shrilly in pain. Once they became a bloody mess, even their Nascent Divinities and souls were forcefully torn apart, and their forms were destroyed.

This scene was the result of Sect Masters of Morning Dao Sect choice to send some of their disciples outwards. The moment they saw it, their expressions grew dark.

Right then, there were only a few cultivators left in Morning Dao Sect. There were only about a few million of them. After all, most of the cultivators of Morning Dao Sect were in the world outside, and there were definitely very few who could survive the rampaging whirlwind. Because of it, the whirlwind's actions were the equivalent... to giving a hard blow to Morning Dao Sect's soul.

However, as long as they could survive it, then with their foundation, they would definitely be able to recover.

But the prerequisite to this was that they did not suffer an even greater disaster, or else... there would be a great possibility that after existing for countless years, Morning Dao Sect would disappear in the river of history within Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, just like Ancient Wei.

Yet... to Morning Dao Sect, this sort of hope was only that, hope. In fact, it did not even last for long before it shattered when a shocking bang came from Su Xuan Yi's isolation grounds.

The chamber serving as Su Xuan Yi's isolation grounds was falling apart layer by layer in the mid of the rumbling sounds. In just a dozen breaths, it crumbled to pieces with a bang. When the dimension shattered, a heinous, murderous aura which seemed to have been oppressed for tens of thousands of years rose was swiftly released.

Along with that murderous aura came a figure with long hair and black robes. It walked out slowly from the destroyed isolation grounds. Its appearance immediately caused the sky in the world to turn black and countless cracks to appear on the ground as it trembled.

"Sublime Paragon, you had your physical body explode so it would turn it into a seal that would put my body in complete lockdown! Dao Chen, you used the Great Soul Reversal Art to have your will fuse with this place so that I could not walk out of this chamber.

"But now..." The black figure threw his head back and laughed menacingly. There was madness in that laughter, along with thirst for blood and a craziness that spoke of willingness to destroy the universe to achieve his goals.

"But now, Lord Sublime Paragon, your body and soul were destroyed. When you personally entered the physical body I prepared for you, your soul naturally disappeared!

"Dao Chen... you might have been able to fuse your will into the dimension and turn it into a seal serving as a chamber, but you didn't expect that once the whirlwind fused with the power of the World, it could reduce your seal to its weakest state, allowing me, who had fully recovered, to be able to easily break it!"

The black-clad figure with the heinous murderous aura was naturally... Su Xuan Yi!

"I swore an oath in the past that if I should ever be able to walk out of this seal, I would definitely bring about a bloodbath in Morning Dao Sect to exact revenge for what you've done in the past!"

A bloodthirsty smirk appeared on Su Xuan Yi's lips. Behind him was Sang standing silently. He stared into the distance, but no one knew what he was thinking. However, it was obvious that... Morning Dao Sect had reached its end.

When Su Xuan Yi's laughter spread out, he immediately left the world. Booming sounds that surged into the sky reverberated in the air, and the world immediately shattered to pieces.

At the same time, a loud, deafening bang which shook the hearts of all the cultivators within Morning Dao Sect rang out in the nine floating continents within the first plane of Morning Dao Sect. At the instant it echoed, everyone saw a scene they would never be able to forget in their lives. In fact, it could even be said that it was the final, most dazzling thing they saw.

One of the nine continents suddenly shattered amid the loud bang, and all the lives on it, all the mountains, rivers, and buildings instantly collapsed.

A long-haired, middle-aged man dressed in black stood at the spot where the shattered continent had once been. His head was lowered to stare at the ground. There was an bottomless, profound look in his eyes, like flames were burning madly in it.

"I once said that this World shall be built for Abyss." His voice was not loud, but the instant it traveled outwards, it caused the air to tremble, the heavens to shudder, all the continents in the place to rumble, and the hearts of all the cultivators to quiver while indescribable terror rose within them.

With a smile on his face, Su Xuan Yi took a step forward and swung his right arm. Booming sounds rose in the air, and another continent shattered.

"It has been many years since then, and I have waited long for this day." Su Xuan Yi moved, and three consecutive bangs shook the sky. In no time, only four of the nine continents remained!

"Who are you?!" Roars filled with shock and anger came from the distance. At the same time, dozens of long arcs charged forth with loud whistles. Needless to say, the people in the lead were Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing.

They fixed their stares on Su Xuan Yi. This person appeared unfamiliar, but there was also a hint of familiarity about him. However, they simply could not remember who he was.

"Who am I?" A hint of derision appeared at the corners of Su Xuan Yi's lips. He suddenly threw his head back and laughed before he lifted his right hand. He did not even move his body, only choosing to point at Sect Master Ri, who had been the one to speak among the three.

“This person’s flesh and blood shalt be used as an offering for mine people, and his soul shalt become mine vessel.”

The pupils of Sect Master Ri, who had the power of those in Death Realm, immediately shrank. At the same time, a shrill scream of pain tumbled out from his mouth. His body instantly withered.

The moment he looked like he was about to die, he raised his right hand and struck the center of his brows. With a bang, his physical body was destroyed, but his Nascent Divinity succeeded in fleeing.

“A Sublime Paragon’s power! He has the power of a Sublime Paragon!!” At the instant his shrill shrieks reverberated in the air, Sect Master Ri’s Nascent Divinity shuddered, and under all the people’s disbelieving gazes... he turned into a crimson wooden sword in the blink of an eye.

The wooden sword hummed, and in a flash, it charged to Su Xuan Yi. It was a telling sign that it was now an Enchanted Treasure. If anyone observed the wooden sword closely, they would find that its presence was identical to that of the wooden sword he had wanted to give to Su Ming!

“Art of Serendipity... This is... the power of a Sublime Paragon!”

The expressions of Sect Masters Ri and Yue instantly changed while Sect Masters behind them went stark pale.

“You’re a Sublime Paragon!!” Sect Master Yue’s voice was filled with disbelief.

“Sublime Paragon? Look closely and see for yourselves who I am!!”

Su Xuan Yi swung his arm, and his face immediately changed. His presence also became that of Dao Chen!

Chapter 1140: Dust

The instant a presence with which all the Sect Masters of Morning Dao Sect were familiar with erupted, they recognized... that it belonged to their Progenitor, Dao Chen!

“Impossible. Impossible...” Sect Master Yue shuddered. Disbelief appeared in his eyes, followed by great sadness.

“Su Xuan Yi! You’re Su Xuan Y!!” Sect Master Xing’s cried out as his breathing quickened. In his voice was indescribable fear and despair.

“I remember you. You were not yet a Sect Master in the past.” Su Xuan Yi smiled faintly. While staring at Sect Master Xing, he raised his right hand and pointed at him.

The world darkened. Shrill screams of pain caused all those who heard them to feel their hearts tremble. When the world brightened, Sect Master Xing was no longer around. The Almighty in Death Realm had already turned into a red wooden sword that floated around Su Xuan Yi.

“Run! All disciples of Morning Dao Sect, Morning Dao Sect is no longer! With everything that you have, RUN!!!”

As the only Sect Master remaining, Sect Master Yue laughed brokenly with madness in his voice. His words were filled with grief, and he rushed towards Su Xuan Yi the next moment. This Sect Master in Death Realm had chosen to die a heroic death.

“I was born in Morning Dao Sect, and I will die in Morning Dao Sect! This is my home, and even if I die, I will die defending my home!

“Morning Dao Sect, if I am ever born again and you are still around, I still want to be a part of you!”

As he roared, he went aflame. His physical body burned, his Nascent Divinity burned, and even his soul started to burn. A destructive power born from self-destruction was swiftly released by the rampaging power within him.

Madness appeared on the faces of people behind him. Some might have chosen to retreat, but the majority chose to self-destruct.

If they could not live with Morning Dao Sect, then they would die with Morning Dao Sect!

The explosion from dozens of Sect Masters was a madness that could shake the heavens and earth, but it was... destined to be unable to erupt. If Su Ming could control time and make it go in reverse, then it was even more so for Su Xuan Yi!

He only lifted his right hand and swung it forward, and the whole universe’s time flowed in reverse. The explosions were extinguished. The next moment, everyone... turned into red wooden swords.

“From today onwards, Morning Dao Sect will no longer exist,” Su Xuan Yi said faintly, then raised both his arms to swing them forward. Immediately, the dozens of red wooden swords around him whistled and charged in all directions. Wherever they went, continents would crumble, and cultivators would be sliced apart and die wretched deaths.

Even more strange was the fact that every single time the dozens of wooden swords killed a person, a new one would appear in place of the person who had died.

Because of it, as the wooden swords swept sideways, their number gradually increased. If anyone was to use their divine sense to check them at that moment, they would be able to tell that a soul of a member of Morning Dao Sect could be found in each of the wooden swords. They were in endless pain, and they could only watch helplessly as the wooden swords formed from their bodies killed their fellow sect members, friends, lifelong partners, and even the love of their lives.

And the cause of all this was Su Xuan Yi who stood in midair. With the expression of someone who enjoyed watching the deaths and slaughter around him, he stared at the destruction of the sect and listened to the pain-filled cries.

“Destroy all of your families and your sect. I will take back several times what you took from us when you descended on the Fifth True World all those years ago. This... is just the beginning.”

A smile appeared on Su Xuan Yi's lips. Behind him, Sang watched everything quietly. Conflict and hesitation appeared in his eyes. Yet after a long while, he only sighed and lowered his head.

For a time being, the entire Morning Dao Sect was drenched in blood and encased in crazed slaughter. The continents shattered, and soon, all of them were reduced to pieces of rock that fell into Dao Ocean.

The ninety-nine continents in the second plane too, could not escape from the disaster. As more red wooden swords appeared until their numbers eventually reached a state where they could no longer be counted, the continents crumbled simultaneously.

It did not matter whether they were men, women, the elderly, or the young. Even the toddlers died forlorn deaths. It was a destruction of a sect, so all manner of living within it had to be killed.

Roars echoed in the air at that moment. Four long arcs shot out from Dao Ocean. Within them were the four Spirit Beasts of Morning Dao Sect: the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird, and Black Turtle!

The four beasts had bloodshot eyes. At the instant they rushed out, they charged towards Su Xuan Yi. The fastest among them was the Vermilion Bird. It instantly closed in, but Su Xuan Yi only raised his hand and swung his arm in its direction before a sea of fire surrounded it. The Vermilion Bird was born of fire, but at that moment, it let out a shrill cry and was reduced to ashes.

Sword light shone. The incoming Azure Dragon was beheaded. Its Nascent Divinity was destroyed, and only its long body fell onto a destroyed continent with a bang.

Falling along with it was the White Tiger. Its body was not complete, for it had turned into countless threads of flesh and blood. Like blood rain pouring from the sky, it scattered all over the land.

As for the Black Turtle, its shell was destroyed. Su Xuan Yi dug out its bloody heart and squashed it into a core. Then he ate it.

“A Black Turtle’s core still tastes pretty good,” Su Xuan Yi said softly, as if he was enjoying the aftertaste. Nostalgia appeared in his eyes.

Booming sounds surged up into the heavens. Once the ninety-nine continents were destroyed, the 999 continents and 9,999 continents in the third and fourth planes were shattered along with all the innocent lives on them. All of them were robbed of their right to live.

Everything in Morning Dao Sect was destroyed, and the sky was reduced to a mere wreck. The ground was ruined. Blood dyed the fog in Dao Ocean, and a bloody stench filled all the parts of the sect.

“Only this Morning Dao Sect is pleasant to the eye.”

Su Xuan Yi ended his recollection of the taste of the Black Turtle’s core, then raised his right hand to strike the shattered sky. Immediately, rumbling sounds rang out once more from the highest spot of the sky. The tower of the Sect Masters was shattered along with a plate created from countless valuable materials. They had originally floated up in the sky, unseen by the naked eye.

Carved into the plate was Morning Dao Sect’s name. At that moment, the plate which had been passed down through generations and which had existed since Morning Dao Sect was created cracked into many pieces.

A smile appeared on Su Xuan Yi’s face. As he stared at the no longer existing Morning Dao Sect, he turned around and walked away. Sang followed quietly behind him. The two of them walked out of Morning Dao Sect and stepped into the rampaging whirlwind.

“It has ended. With just one more thing, everything will be perfect.”

Su Xuan Yi stood in the whirlwind. The distortions of time could be seen around him, as if he could affect a certain part of the whirlwind surrounding him. The distortions made it disappear, returning that part of the galaxy to a point many years ago when the galaxy was in a state of peace.

“Su Ming, my son, where are you?”

Su Xuan Yi smiled faintly. When he was about to close his eyes and search for him, Sang finally lifted his head behind him and stared at Su Xuan Yi’s back.

“You promised me,” he said softly.

Chapter 1141: Separating from the Seed of Life Extermination

“You promised me that even if you are going to use Su Ming as a host, you will not harm his life, and that this will be a great serendipitous event for him.”

Not a single hint of emotion could be detected on Sang’s face. However, it was the first time he ever used that tone to speak with Su Xuan Yi in the countless years he had been by his side!

It was also the first time he did not have respect stemming from the bottom of his heart in his words. Instead, there was only a cold chill in his voice, and Sang did not even bother hiding it. Instead, he showed it without holding any of it back.

Su Xuan Yi turned his head around and cast Sang a deep look. A darkness gradually rose in his eyes.

“What did you say? Say it one more time, I didn’t hear you clearly,” Su Xuan Yi said faintly. His voice was awe-inspiring, and it sounded like a calm before a storm.

“You promised me that you wouldn’t harm Su Ming!”

Sang trembled lightly. Su Xuan Yi’s mighty pressure was incredibly hard to bear, but he still gritted his teeth and enunciated his words clearly.

“Sang, you have indeed grown to love that child as his parent, but his family name is Su. He is an Abyss Builder, and he must be prepared to sacrifice everything for the Abyss Builders. I can promise you as I have already promised him that I will make it up to him. I will make it up to him for everything that I’ve done in the end!

Su Xuan Yi stayed silent for a moment before a complicated look appeared on his face, and he said softly, “What I need the both of you to do is to believe in me completely. Hand me your lives and your destinies, and one day, I will fulfill my promise and will make it up to all of you for everything.”

“I have always believed in you. It has been the case in the past, it still is now, and it will be so in the future, but I have one request. Don’t harm him anymore. Let him go. You promised me...” Anguish appeared on Sang’s face as he said those words in a low voice.

Su Xuan Yi fell silent. In the galaxy with the roaring whirlwinds, his silence lasted for about the time it takes for an incense stick to burn.

“And if I refuse?” Su Xuan Yi’s calm voice spread out slowly through the howling whirlwind, and a resolute expression appeared on Sang’s face.

“If you don’t keep to your promise, then I... can’t be sure whether I can keep to my own promise to help you complete the second part of your plan.”

The instant Sang said that, Su Xuan Yi whirled around, and with an electrifying gaze, he stared at Sang. After a long, long time, a smile suddenly appeared on his face.

“I promised you, and I will fulfill my promise.”

Su Xuan Yi decided not to search for Su Ming. Instead, he raised his right hand, formed a seal, and swung his arm. Immediately, whirlwinds filled the space in the galaxy, and a complicated runic symbol appeared. It flashed a few times before disappearing without a trace.

In a galaxy far away from this place but still within True Morning Dao World was the territory which had once been the core of the Immortals’ Union. It was also the spot where the whirlwind began and where Saint Defier’s Heaven Penetrating Pillar was once located. Su Ming, who had just executed the first invisible battle of Possession against the resistance of Xing Ji Dao suddenly felt a ripple in his heart. The half of the Seed of Life Extermination which was about to mature in his soul had trembled.

Right after, Su Ming felt a great suction force in his soul. It shrank by three-tenths of its original size, and the speed of Seed of Life Extermination’s growth instantly increased exponentially.

All of this happened the instant Su Ming suppressed Xing Ji Dao’s Nascent Divinity with the power from Possession!

When nearly three-tenths of his soul were forcefully devoured by the Seed of Life Extermination, a feeling of weakness he had never felt before rose in his heart. At that moment, the final bit of disbelief towards this matter shattered in Su Ming’s heart. It was followed by a great pain due to the destruction of that disbelief.

The Seed of Life Extermination seemed to have gone through a catalysis due to the control of someone from a boundless distance away. In just the span of one breath, it sucked his soul again, and this time, it took another three-tenths!

Most of Su Ming’s soul had been absorbed by that point, and a strange and enchanting light spread out from the Seed of Life Extermination. It traveled through Su Ming’s soul, and it could be clearly seen that the Seed of Life Extermination longed to become

complete and was rapidly growing for that purpose. Judging by the looks of it, as long as it could absorb a little more of the soul, it could reach completion.

Su Ming stared at it in silence. He did not fight back, and neither did he struggle against it. To Su Ming, all of this was already unnecessary. It was just like a dream that a child might have, and now, he was about to wake up from it. He... was about to fully grow up.

In silence, Su Ming saw the Seed of Life Extermination shudder. Right after, the third violent suction force appeared. This time, it absorbed the remaining thirty nine-hundredths of Su Ming's soul, leaving behind only a sliver of it. Everything else was absorbed cleanly.

When nearly all of Su Ming's soul was absorbed, the Seed of Life Extermination finally became completely. The statue resembling half a ship was filled with great power. It also seemed like it contained the will of all lives. Once it was completed... it left Su Ming's soul and flew out of his body. With a flash, it left the white ring and charged towards the whirlwind in space.

Su Ming watched this scene. He stared at the Seed of Life Extermination leaving and felt like his past had also been taken away by the Seed of Life Extermination. At that moment, Su Ming died, and the one who survived would be a person who loved silence, refused to show his face, and in all the people's eyes would only appear as a stranger.

Su Ming's soul had not been completely absorbed. A sliver of it was left, but if Su Ming did not receive any serendipity, then while he might not die, he would become incredibly weak. He would be reduced to a mere mortal, and even one who had forgotten everything about his past.

Perhaps instead of saying that it was a sliver of his soul, it would be better to say that it was a thread of life force. It was the life force Su Xuan Yi had given to him once his elder had fought and exchanged himself for him.

However, to Su Ming, the existence of the sliver of life force was not important. Even if he did not have it, he could still rise to power. It would just take a bit longer.

Su Ming stared at the Seed of Life Extermination leaving into the distance and watched it disappear into the whirlwind while he mumbled under his breath, "Su Ming has died. From now on... I am Mo Su!"

His eyes slowly fell shut. He had lost ninety-nine-hundredths of his soul. During that instant, he had fused with the pure soul left behind by the black-robed old man once the other's consciousness was wiped away from it.

At the same time, the sliver of Su Ming's original soul started absorbing the black-robed old man's soul in a mad rush. The so-called fusion was in truth Su Ming's soul treating

the black-robed old man's soul as nutrients, just like the seed had done to him. By doing so, he could make himself grow swiftly.

Time trickled by. As he continued absorbing this soul and executed the extreme devouring, the black-robed old man's soul became smaller while his own soul gradually grew larger.

When the black-robed old man's soul was completely absorbed, Su Ming's soul had already recovered to nearly six-tenths of its original power.

This did not mean that the black-robed old man's soul was too weak. After all, based on their levels of cultivation, the black-robed old man was far stronger than Su Ming. However, in the process of devouring, the black-robed old man's soul suffered from a form of deterioration, and Su Ming was not executing a simple fusion either. He was using the black-robed old man's soul to nourish himself. Because of it, once he got rid of the impurities, he could return to nearly six-tenths of his soul.

This was akin to piece of land having a seed. As the seed grew, it absorbed all the water from the ground. Once it matured and absorbed all the water, the land would turn into a desert.

The cracked, dry ground would also be land, but if it was used to describe the black-robed old man's soul, it could be said that the desert was the impurities in it.

Once Su Ming absorbed the black-robed old man's soul, he opened his eyes, and without any hesitation, he cast his gaze on the suppressed Xing Ji Dao.

The man's resistance was as fierce as ever, but Su Ming had taken full grasp of timing and seized the opportunity to gain an upper hand on him. He only needed to maintain this advantage over Xing Ji Dao and continue using his inborn talent in Possession to suppress him.

Even if Su Ming was an Abyss Builder, two consecutive Possessions was an act of complete madness. Yet at that moment, Su Ming could no longer care about it. He wanted to live, and he wanted to live properly. He wanted to live another life so that he could overturn his destiny.

When Su Xuan Yi formed a seal and swung his arm in the whirlwind within the galaxy beyond Morning Dao Sect which was located incredibly far away from where Su Ming was, the complicated runic symbol flashed three times before it floated in the galaxy without moving. However, in just a few dozens of breaths, a long arc with a speed exceeding that of shifting came from the distance.

There was dark light spreading out from that long arc, and it was so quick that it surpassed what divine senses could detect. It instantly appeared beside the runic symbol and fused with it. As that item came to an abrupt halt, what appeared before Su

Xuan Yi and Sang's eyes was Su Ming's Seed of Life Extermination—the statue of half of a ship!

As Sang stared at it, a hint of pain and grief appeared in his eyes.

There was only determination in Su Xuan Yi's eyes as he slowly raised his hand to seize the space in the direction of the ship formed by half of the Seed of Life Extermination. Immediately, it shot through the distortions of time around Su Xuan Yi and appeared on his palm. He wrapped his fingers around it.

"Su Ming didn't die. I fulfilled my promise to you." Su Xuan Yi swung his right arm and put away the Seed of Life Extermination before he raised his head and stared at the distant galaxy.

"Let's go. We should leave True Morning Dao World now. Let me bring you to the True World that belongs to me." Su Xuan Yi took a step forward in space, and his body instantly disappeared. Sang followed him silently, but before he vanished, he turned his head around and cast his gaze into the distance with a complicated expression on his face. A hint of resolution which Su Xuan Yi could not see appeared in his eyes.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1142: Tears from a Beauty

- Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1142: Tears from a Beauty

Chapter 1142: Tears from a Beauty

Standing beyond the palace floating in the air which towered into the sky in the Emperor of Abyss' True World was the Emperor of Abyss, who was also the Kalpa Lord of that World. He had his hands placed behind his back as he stood there as if waiting for someone's arrival.

He was very patient. It looked like even if he had to wait for ten thousand years, not a single hint of emotion would appear on his face. Time trickled by, and after an unknown amount of time had passed, the air in front of him suddenly distorted. In time, Su Xuan Yi walked out. Sang followed behind him quietly. The Emperor of Abyss of the Emperor of Abyss' True World did not appear at all surprised when he saw Su Xuan Yi and Sang.

"Greetings, Sublime Paragon!" At the instant the Emperor of Abyss saw Su Xuan Yi, he immediately swung his arm... and knelt on one knee, then bowed like a disciple greeting his Master.

“Dao Er, there aren’t any outsiders here. You don’t need to do this. Raise.” A smile appeared on Su Xuan Yi’s face.

“Master!” The middle-aged man raised his head, and respect appeared on his face. When he cast his gaze on Sang, his lips curled up into a smile, and he nodded towards him.

“Junior brother, it has been many years since we last met. You look as fine as ever.”

.....

The door to Yu Xuan’s room within the Emperor of Abyss’ True World was pushed open silently, and Su Xuan Yi walked slowly into the room.

Yu Xuan had her back turned to the door, and she was sitting by the window as she stared at the starry sky outside. The moment Su Xuan Yi walked in, she shuddered, and a complicated expression appeared on her face.

Su Xuan Yi stared at Yu Xuan quietly. After a long while, he sighed softly and brought out an item from his bosom that he placed on the table. He then said softly, “You’ve suffered over these years... but he doesn’t suit you. From now on, he will only be a mortal.”

Su Xuan Yi stood silent for a moment before sighing and turning around to walk out of the room. He gently closed the door behind himself.

When Su Xuan Yi left, Yu Xuan turned her head around. Tears flowed down her face as she stared blankly at the statue of the ship formed by half of the Seed of Life Extermination placed on the table. More and more tears streamed down her cheeks.

.....

Endless whirlwind could be seen howling everywhere in the broken True Morning Dao World. The terrifying power of the World could tear through many planets and even rip apart space. It could also easily destroy all cultivators’ bodies.

Countless torn limbs could be seen in various places within the gigantic True Morning Dao World. They were from the cultivators which belonged to the Immortals’ Union and Morning Dao Sect, but no matter on which side they had fought, they were in truth... all people of True Morning Dao World.

Perhaps they had not managed to put the hatred they harbored against each other behind them before the disaster struck, but it could be disregarded when facing it. The hatred could even be forgotten... because surviving was their only goal.

As endless numbers of cultivators from the Immortals' Union died, they longed to receive help from the Immortals' Union, but they did not manage to live till that moment, because the only thing waiting for them was the madness of the disaster. It was a nightmare from which no one could save them.

It was especially so for the cultivators near the core of the Immortals' Union. They had begun laughing brokenly, because they saw the galaxy of the Immortals' Union collapsing and the region being reduced to ruins.

However, they were also fortunate, because they knew that from then on, the Immortals' Union would no longer exist, which was why they chose to escape. They chose to use every method in their disposal... to survive through the disaster!

Those cultivators who did not know that the galaxy of the Immortals' Union had shattered still harbored the hope of returning. Yet what awaited them would be only the fear and bewilderment which would rise in their hearts once they saw the wreckage.

Compared to the Immortals' Union, the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect were more fortunate. This did not mean that fewer of them died, but that those who survived would forever have hope, and its name was Morning Dao Sect.

Since all the Relocation Runes in Morning Dao Sect had been shut down, they might never be able to return and would never be able to see what had happened, but in their minds, Morning Dao Sect would always exist.

This was hope. It would forever remain in the hearts of the people who survived, and perhaps it would be passed down generation by generation...

Seven days after the disaster passed, not only did the whirlwind in True Morning Dao Sect not disappear, it had become even stronger. No one knew how long it would last, and perhaps not even those from Saint Defier's camp knew precisely when it would disappear.

As long as there was power of the World surging in from the gap formed in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, the endless whirlwind would exist. Yet whether it was one year, ten years, or even one hundred years or one thousand years, there would come a day when the power of the World would stop. The whirlwind in True Morning Dao World would also disappear at that moment.

Once it was gone, Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos would come face to face with a slaughter and disaster brought by Saint Defier or Dark Dawn, or even both. Compared to the whirlwind, this was the true disaster, because this would be a bloodbath which would affect the entire Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos instead of a single True World!

Before this disastrous bloodbath arrived, True Morning Dao World would remain filled with whirlwinds formed by the power of the World. It would be the calm before a storm for Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos.

There was nothing anyone could do about that. It was impossible for them to mend the gap formed by Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos. They could only continue making themselves stronger, making their sects stronger, and making their True Worlds stronger so that they could have a sliver of hope to survive in the final disaster.

While working hard, they would wait silently for the dazzling arrival of that disaster!

To Saint Defier and Dark Dawn, which lay beyond Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, the period of peace and quiet was the critical moment for them to wage war against each other.

They had to fight to seize the gap, and since the gap was in Saint Defier's camp, Dark Dawn had to pay several times the price to seize it.

Yet if Dark Dawn was going to attack with everything, Saint Defier had to fight back with everything they had as well.

No matter what, it might be the final period of peace in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos. It might last only for a short moment or maybe a long time, but no matter how much time it took, it would definitely come to an end one day.

That moment might no longer be far away.

When the seven days passed in the broken True Morning Dao World and the whirlwind became even stronger, at the spot right under the gap formed in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos where the whirlwind was born, a white light rushed out from the spot where the pillar of light which connected to the heavens had once been. The white light traveled so quickly that it instantly rushed out of the strongest whirlwind which was located at the core of the Immortals' Union.

When it ventured out, the cocoon which was formed by Bai Feng only had a thin layer of it left. It should have been impossible for the cocoon to last till that moment. In truth, it should have shattered many days ago, and everything in it was supposed to be destroyed by the whirlwind.

The only reason it had been able to do so was because Bai Feng had executed an irreversible Forbidden Art from Phoenix Sect for the sake of surviving. It used her life as a source of power and would burn it to provide the cocoon with several times the support. This was how she had been able to last that long.

However, the price she paid was incredibly devastating to her as a woman. It could be seen within the thin cocoon that Bai Feng's face was no longer as beautiful as it was in

the past. Instead, it was full of wrinkles. She no longer looked youthful, but like she had just crawled out of a coffin. An old and decaying presence spread out from her body.

She was still dressed in white, but she was no longer beautiful. Instead, she was filled with sorrow and misery.

It stemmed from her very soul. To her, the seven days had felt like her entire life.

She did not have to do act like that. She could have welcomed death in a more dignified manner and choose to die beautiful if she could not survive.

However, she could not accept this. She was afraid of death, and she could not accept that she had lost everything. She had always dreamed of ascending to Saint Defier Expanse Cosmos, and for this dream, she could give up on everything.

Yet now, she was swathed in deep despair. She could only stay in the thin cocoon and wait for Su Ming's arrival. There was no longer any life left for her to burn. Even if the cocoon could continue existing, she had less than a month left to live.

Just when the white light flew out from the core of the whirlwind in the distance and was about to leave, it came to a stop and changed its direction to charge towards Bai Feng. It approached the cocoon in an instant.

The white light pierced Bai Feng's aged eyes. If it was two days ago, she would have been excited. If it was three days ago, Bai Feng would have been so excited that she would have cried. No matter what she would have been asked to give up, as long as the person in the white light would save her, she would promise it all away.

If it was four or five days ago, Bai Feng's choice would still not change... but all of the seven days had passed.

She only had one month left to live, and she knew clearly that she could not reverse what had been done. With numbness, she stared at the white light beyond the cocoon. There was not a hint of emotion on her face, and there were no tears in her eyes. However, if anyone looked at her, they could hear faint cries echoing in space.

After a short moment of silence, a soft sigh that seemed to come from a day filled with snow and wind from the distant past traveled through space. White light shone beyond the cocoon and seeped into it to sweep up Bai Feng. The next moment, the light left into the distance.

The white light was a white ring that was about a hundred something feet big. Naturally, it was Lord Saint Defier's supreme treasure, but right then, it no longer belonged to anyone from Saint Defier. It belonged to Mo Su, who had bid farewell to his past and had been reborn!

Only Su Ming himself knew just how hard it was to devour Xing Ji Dao and all that had happened within the white ring during the past seven days.

Yet all that mattered was that the moment the white ring flew out of the whirlwind, it meant that Su Ming had devoured Xing Ji Dao and his soul.

Su Ming's appearance had changed drastically. He no longer looked as old as the black-robed old man, but much younger. He appeared to be a young man, and he had a handsome face, but there was a hint of ghastliness to it. When his eyes shone, there was life in him, but there was also a dead stillness within his gaze.

He was still dressed in black robes, but the soul in the body underneath them was stronger by nearly three-tenths to Su Ming's previous soul.

His level of cultivation had also increased exponentially. The level of its increase was even more shocking than that of his soul. However, if anyone compared all of these to the white ring, they would not say that those were serendipities, because the real serendipity was the white ring!

This was Lord Saint Defier's supreme treasure, an item which was incredibly rare even in Saint Defier's camp. It was so valuable that it could not be described with words. Yet it had become something which belonged to Su Ming!

In the supreme treasure, there was a hint of presence which belonged to those in Avacaniya. If Su Ming could gain an epiphany from it, then the help it would provide him would be enough to shake the entire universe. In fact, as long as he kept this supreme treasure by his side, it would be the same as having... a chance to step into Avacaniya Realm in the future!

This sort of thing could make all cultivators go mad. This was the real serendipity Su Ming had obtained!

Right then, he sat and meditated within the white ring. Before him was the woman he had saved. Bai Feng, who had now become an old woman, sat quietly in front of him and stared at the world that flashed beyond the ring in a daze. She had not spoken for three days.

She was silent, and Su Ming didn't have anything to say to her either. In truth, he had only saved her due to a hint of sentimentality. He was feeling sentimental about the past, about the relationship they had, about Dark Mountain, about the game of walking in circles they had shared, and about the sigh in the snow.

Chapter 1143: Mortal Refinement Art

Su Ming was silent. He sat in the white ring and stared at the galaxy beyond. It looked boundless when he cast his gaze on it. With countless whirlwinds rampaging around, he could not see a single planet. There were only stones floating in space.

Occasionally, some large ones would sweep past them in the whirlwind. The stones had once been part of the planets in True Morning Dao World, but most of them had been destroyed, filling the galaxy with stone fragments and dust.

There were also fragments from quite a large number of Enchanted Treasures. In fact, there were even some torn pieces of flesh and blood, which filled the galaxy of True Morning Dao World with a bloody stench.

As he stared at the world outside quietly, Su Ming felt like he had returned to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. In fact, even that place was in a much better shape than True Morning Dao World at that moment.

The white ring charged forward with a howl, and the whirlwinds in the world outside looked like they had been cut apart. The instant the ring touched them, they crumbled on their own.

And it was able to do that when Su Ming had only activated one-hundredth of the ring's power, which was all that he could use so far. Su Ming might want to make the white ring bring forth even stronger power, but he lacked the strength to do so.

The power of this treasure was something that not even the black-robed old man and Xing Ji Dao could fully bring forth. They could only use their power to activate the cultivation base left behind in the ring. It was a type of indirect control.

This was why it had been so difficult for Xing Ji Dao activate the treasure. He had used up all of his power, and the pressure on him had also been incredibly great. Because of it, Su Ming had gained a chance to Possess and devour him.

Su Ming's method of controlling the supreme treasure was different from that of Xing Ji Dao. He did not activate the cultivation base contained in the treasure to indirectly control it... but was having the bald crane for that.

"How is it?" Su Ming delivered a divine thought flatly to the bald crane in his heart.

"I'm still a little off. Darn it all, this thing is really quite hard to deal with," the bald crane answered with a pant in Su Ming's mind.

"Are you sure that the method you mentioned will work?" A barely noticeable glint shone in Su Ming's eyes as he delivered his thought.

“Of course it’ll work. Heh heh, don’t worry, when I saw this treasure, a memory appeared in my head. It’s definitely not wrong.

“Mortal Refinement Art was a famous Art used to refine treasures in the past. It has been lost for many years, but thankfully, I still know it. You only need to refine this based on what I said. I can’t promise that you’ll be able to perfectly control this treasure, but you’ll certainly be able to use at least one or two-tenths of its true power.” The bald crane’s smug voice echoed in Su Ming’s mind.

When he devoured Xing Ji Dao and was about to control the white ring, the bald crane had suddenly sent him a thought and told him about the Mortal Refinement Art. This method could allow Su Ming to use his own power to perfectly control the supreme treasure, but the process of refinement was a little problematic.

“With Mortal Refinement Art... you will enter the cycle of reincarnation as a mortal and refine it during the cycles of reincarnation. Once you go through nine cycles of reincarnation and refine it nine times, you can form a connection through the cycles of reincarnation with this treasure, and with that connection, you can control its Essence. You won’t need to have a matching level of cultivation to control it.” A glint shone in Su Ming’s eyes, and he nodded quietly.

“You said that this Art was once very famous? Since it’s so peculiar, why was it lost?” Su Ming suddenly asked in his head. He had a vague bad feeling about it. He had a constant, nagging sense that the bald crane did not seem to be too reliable...

“I don’t know about that. I just know that in my memories, this Art looks very powerful... Huh? I seem to have remembered something. It seems like there is something lacking about, but I can’t remember what it is. Hey! Are you going to use it? Su Ming, if you don’t use it, then I’ll stop making the preparations. This is too tiring,” the bald crane mumbled under its breath.

Su Ming fell silent. In just a few breaths, determination appeared in his eyes.

“Continue with it,” he said faintly.

Another seven days passed. When the seventh day arrived, Su Ming finally saw a planet in the whirlwind-filled galaxy.

It was the first planet he had seen in seven days. It was a cultivation planet which had been mostly destroyed, but a part of it still remained.

As he stared at the broken cultivation planet, a glint shone in Su Ming’s eyes.

‘This disaster affected the entire True Morning Dao World, but there are still planets remaining. That means that there are definitely cultivators who survived the disaster!

'True Morning Dao World has already been destroyed. I wonder what happened to Morning Dao Sect, and what about... my senior brothers? Was Yin Death Region affected?'

The light in Su Ming's eyes darkened. After a moment of silence, he sent a divine thought to the bald crane. Immediately, the white ring turned into a white long arc that changed direction to charge towards the cultivation planet. It instantly approached it and flew straight inside.

The moment Su Ming arrived, the cultivation planet shuddered violently, and more of it shattered. Several crushed rocks were swept away by the whirlwind, as if the cultivation planet had already been destroyed to its limit, and Su Ming's arrival caused the stress it suffered to become greater, causing the edges to start crumbling again.

Thankfully, the crumbling did not last for long before it gradually came to a stop. When Su Ming walked out of the white ring, he stepped onto the ground of the cultivation planet. Above, he saw a broken sky filled with whirlwinds. Beneath him, countless layers seemed to have been lifted off the ground to reveal a bloody-red land.

There was no mountains in the distance, because all them had already been destroyed by whirlwinds. There were no seas either, because they had already been wiped off.

Heat spread out from the ground, and as it intersected with the cold chill in the sky, it formed a violent gust of wind which blew up the sand and swept it across the planet.

There was no presence of lives. In fact, all of them had also been extinguished a long time ago. This was a dead planet, a world with no life force.

Su Ming swept his gaze past the area, then lifted his right leg. Immediately, a huge vortex appeared with a bang on the ground. It lifted the sand and swept it outwards, but it was immediately blown away by a violent gust of wind, clearing the place. In just a few breaths, a gigantic basin appeared under Su Ming's feet.

He cast a glance at it, then sat down at the bottom of the pit. When he lifted his head, he cast a glance at Bai Feng, whose life had already reached its end. Her presence was weak, and she was about to die.

At most, she could live for one more month.

Su Ming had saved Bai Feng had due to his sentiments. She was someone he had loved when he was still ignorant about love. Perhaps it was just a mere joke and the young love had already withered. However, when Bai Feng died, she would not know that the black-robed person beside her was Su Ming.

The invisible destiny connected the two of them, bringing one of them to the other's side when they were about to die. However, the love had been blown away by the wind and

turned into a single snowflake. It lingered, refusing to leave, and they could only lament at destiny as well as their lives...

Su Ming closed his eyes and waited for the bald crane to finish its preparations so that he could use the Mortal Refinement Art to refine the white ring with the will of reincarnation. The bald crane had began making preparations at the very start, but even then, it had yet to finish with them.

Su Ming sat silently as days passed. Gradually, another seven days went by. To Su Ming, they only lasted for an instant. It was a short period of time for him to familiarize himself with his new body, but to Bai Feng, the seven days were nearly three-tenths of what remained of her life.

She only had half a month left, only two cycles of seven days.

Humans were complicated life forms, but no matter how complicated they were, as long as they had emotions, then right before they died, they would find that those emotions were the purest things in their lives.

Bai Feng stared at the sky quietly, and when seven days passed, the aged look on her face became even clearer. Her presence was so weak that she looked like she had turned into a mortal.

"Thank you for saving me," she mumbled her first words in the half a month they had spent together.

The sentence landed in Su Ming's ears. He listened to the familiar voice and watched the woman whose figure he could still recognize even though she had grown old. He sighed in his heart.

It seemed like there were always sighs between the two of them whenever they came in contact with each other. He might have sighed just then, but it might as well have been her too. They had walked in circles in the past, gotten to know each other when the blood moon appeared, and it had determined this unchangeable and indefinable conclusion.

"I only have half a month left, but I still want to thank you for letting me die on this planet instead of the whirlwind," Bai Feng mumbled.

Anguish could be seen on her face. It was not due to her life flowing away, but because she seemed to have remembered something. A faint light shone in her eyes when she immersed herself in her memories.

"In the past, to ascend, I agreed to Di Tian's plan. To ascend, I could sacrifice everything..." Bai Feng stared at the sky while mumbling softly to herself.

“What about now?” Su Ming asked calmly. His voice had changed once he obtained his new body through Possession. It belonged to Zhang Ji Dao, not Su Ming.

“Now...” The anguish on Bai Feng’s face slowly disappeared, and a smile replaced it. That smile made it seem like she had seen through everything, and there was an air of freedom about her. However, there was a hint of regret in that freedom.

“It’s strange. Right now, I’m not thinking about trying to obtain life or dreaming about ascension. Instead... some of the memories of the past keep resurfacing in my mind. Perhaps this is a memory that belongs to my clone, but when it died, her encounters were buried in a corner of my memories eternally.

“Now... I think that those memories are of the incredibly happy and beautiful moments of my life,” Bai Feng said softly. However, her beautiful voice had turned hoarse due to the aging. Instead of dark locks, her head was covered in white, and her bones seemed about ready to crack.

Chapter 1144: Him in Emperor’s Robes!

In True Morning Dao World, there was a spot that had once belonged to the Immortals. It was an incredibly strange place even to the four Great True Worlds and the whole of Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos.

Over there was the homeland of Su Ming’s memories—Yin Death Region!

The entrance to it was a vortex that seemed to have no end. While Su Ming was listening to Bai Feng’s quiet murmurs in the pit on the broken planet in the galaxy, there were countless whirlwinds formed by the power of the World which could destroy cultivators and planets howling before the vortex, but even they... could not affect Yin Death Vortex. They could blow around it, but not enter.

Countless dimensions were within Yin Death Vortex, and there were plenty of races living there. The Berserkers were simply one of them.

In one of the many dimensions was a fiery red world. Its sky was red, its earth was red, and it was filled with countless seas of fire that swept up hot air. When wind blew, it would stir up flames which were so bright they were blinding. The world looked like a burning hell!

Over there was a mountain surrounded by flames. It was a volcano that had been extinguished countless years ago. In it was a huge lake of fire. Red light shone from it, casting the volcano in a dark red light.

Floating in the lake of fire was a purple coffin. No one knew how long it had been in that place, but the ancient air spreading out from it made it clear that it should have been around for at least tens of thousands of years.

Countless runic symbols were branded on the coffin, and once every nine breaths, they would flash. It seemed like this would continue without end for all eternity. However... banging sounds suddenly came from the coffin. This was the first time since countless years that this happened, and it changed the rhythm of the runic symbols. Instead of shining once every nine breaths, they began to shine once every eight breaths.

The banging sounds became increasingly louder, as if something was continuously hitting the coffin. The runic symbols began to shine even more frequently, changing their interval to once every seven breaths, then once every six breaths. When it became once every three breaths, a louder than before bang came from the coffin.

At that moment, the lid of the coffin lifted, and it slowly floated into midair. The lake of fire around it started tumbling about furiously, as if it was roaring loudly. At the same time, an arm shot out from the coffin.

It was a thin and shriveled arm with all five fingers parted from each other. At the instant it shot out of the coffin, all the lava in the volcano erupted. The land in the area outside roared at once. The sky, too, trembled furiously. Tumbling red clouds immediately appeared above the volcano.

It was as if the entire world had been affected the instant the arm shot out from the coffin. Soon after, the five parted fingers slowly clenched into a fist. The entire world's flames and heat immediately started surging madly towards them as if they were centering themselves towards the arm.

All of this only lasted the duration of the hand clenching itself into a fist. If anyone looked from the highest point in that world, they would have been able to see that the sea of fire had tumbled backwards. Wherever the flames passed, all heat would be taken from the land, and the ground would turn black.

At the same time, all the flames in the place, including the flame clouds in the sky, were absorbed by the volcano. They gathered on the palm from the arm that had reached out from the coffin. Once the person seized the flames, a crimson pearl appeared in his hand.

Within it, a sea of fire was tumbling, and fire clouds were swimming. It looked like an entire world.

A sigh came from the coffin. Gradually, a tall figure slowly sat up. When he eventually stood up, a crimson robe could be seen. That robe was not a normal robe... but an Emperor's robe!

A crown was also on the man's head, giving him the domineering air of an Emperor. It filled the volcano and the entire world.

"I failed, huh?" the person said softly.

He had a strange, imposing tone, like he looked down on all forms of life in the world. He might have said that he failed, but no one could hear even a single hint of regret towards his failure in his voice.

"I have long since guessed it. The possibility of success for it was too low. Su Xuan Yi was the most formidable man of his generation. There was no way that he would not have any backups, but since the start, my main plan was only to learn what he was planning.

"An enemy who can no be understood is frightening, but once they reveal themselves, they are no longer frightening.

"The intention behind this plan was to make Su Xuan Yi go through with his plan so that I would know what he was planning..."

As he spoke, the man in the Emperor's robe and crown slowly raised his head to reveal his face. Needless to say... he was Di Tian!

Perhaps it would be more accurate to say that he looked exactly the same as Di Tian, but his face was even more ancient. The domineering air about him was also stronger, and his level of cultivation was also greater!

"I had sent out a soul fragment as a test. It would have been good if I could succeed, but even if I failed, it doesn't matter. That tiny Immortals' Union holds no importance to me," the man said faintly.

A glint shone in his eyes, and he raised his head to stare at the sky above the volcano. Gradually, the hint of a smile appeared at the corners of his lips.

"Three Sovereigns and five Emperors, my fellow Daoists, have all of you rested well?"

His voice traveled through the world and echoed within all of Yin Death Region. After a moment, powerful ripples charged towards him from seven different dimensions.

There were terrifying divine senses touching each other in that place, as if they were communicating with each other. After a long while, they disappeared to return to their own worlds, and Yin Death Vortex gradually regained its calm.

"It is just as I thought. We'll have Su Xuan Yi change the world outside. There is no need for us to get out so soon. We'll let him continue with his plan, and at the final moment, we will let him know that he... is just a farce."

Di Tian smiled faintly before he slowly lay down in his coffin once more. He unfurled his right hand, allowing the crimson pearl in it to spread out and fill the world with seas of fire once more.

“My injuries have completely recovered from ten thousand years ago... Avacaniya, Avacaniya... I’ve come to understand the basics of this Realm. If I get more time, then perhaps I will truly have the right... to reach this Realm. I have you to thank for this, Su Xuan Yi...” Di Tian mumbled, and the lid of the coffin fell with a bang. Once the coffin was sealed, it slowly sank back into the lake of fire, disappearing without a trace.

.....

“That damn Immortals’ Union, that damn Morning Dao Sect, this damn universe, and this damn whirlwind!”

In another broken planet within True Morning Dao World was a young man dressed in black robes who looked incredibly disheveled and had madness in his eyes. He brought his arms up as if he was pushing up the sky while shouting at it.

“Hey, you bastards! Persevere! The Rune is about to be completed! This damn whirlwind will not be able to destroy us cultivators from the War Chamber!”

As the young man roared, the near twenty thousand cultivators behind roared as well, and all of them sent forth their power for it to fuse with the air. Gradually, a screen of light appeared. It looked like it wanted to envelop the planet within it.

In the crowd was Flame Fiends’ Progenitor and Zhu You Cai. They were both there!

.....

In a galaxy which was in True Morning Dao World was a lone ship which seemed to treat the whirlwind as a huge wave in the ocean. It treated the galaxy as seawater, and it was swimming forward through it.

“O wind, o stars, you’re so pretty... O wreckages, o space, it’s a pity that there isn’t any sunlight. Ah, why are you not pretty?” A bright and clear voice rose from the ship. When it reverberated in space, it held a hint of exultation.

“What a lovely poem!”

“Sir, your literary talents are great, a gift rarely seen in a million years. This is definitely the best poem I’ve ever heard.” The voice filled with exultation was soon followed by a woman’s giggles.

As the ship went forward, it could be seen that there was a layer of fog surrounding it. The fog appeared to be thin, but it seemed to keep the whirlwind at bay, not allowing the power of the World to reach the ship.

It could be seen that there was a table on the ship. Sitting beside it was an incredibly handsome long-haired man. He had an air about him like he was as gentle as a flower.

By his side were three women as beautiful as flowers. With gentle gazes, they stared at the man. It looked like even if the man spewed out a pile of utter crap... that crap would still sound poetic to them...

One of them was pouring wine for the man while another was holding a sweet fruit for him. The third one was gently massaging his legs. The women's petite faces had gentle and loving expressions.

The man shook his head, as if he was thinking back about his poem.

From behind the four people, in other words the end of the ship, came a discordant sound that broke the poetic air.

It was a snore as loud as thunder, and it even had a rhythmic pattern to it. Occasionally, it would be loud, while at other times, it would be soft. The one who produced it was an incredibly large man that looked like a fierce tiger. In his hands, he held a pot of wine.

At that moment, he was dreaming, and there was drool trickling out of his mouth. No one could tell what he was dreaming about, but he seemed to be very happy.

The man turned around and murmured, "Youngest junior brother, come drink this pot of wine." After those words, his snores became even louder.

"Hah..." As if he had heard the murmured words, the man who was as gentle as a flower slowly opened his eyes to stare at the distant galaxy before he lowered his head and sighed.

"Youngest junior brother, where are you?"

.....

At the same time, within one of the 999 continents in the third plane of the now ruined Morning Dao Sect was a figure gradually crawling out from the wreckage. He looked rather pathetic, but monstrous hatred could be detected on his sleazy face.

"SU XUAN YI!!!"

The man quivered with rage. He had an extremely low level of cultivation, but the hate spreading out from his body at that moment could destroy anything.

Tears fell from his eyes as he stared at his surroundings. After throwing his head back and roaring, he flew out. He wanted to see if there were any other survivors. Even if there was only a sliver of hope, he would not give up.

Chapter 1145: Xu Hui...

The person was De Shun.

The De in his name meant morality, and Shun meant having everything going one's way when they bought things.

It was the De Shun who had went to Su Ming's lotus platform when he was going through the challenges as a Dynast in True Morning Dao World. The things he said had left the ten million cultivators in the area flabbergasted, and even Su Ming had been stunned for a moment.

The man had great talent, but did not have the heart to practice the ways of cultivation and only wanted to conduct small business. Yet now, the cheeky grin on his face had been replaced by searing hatred, along with deep sadness.

"They died. They're all dead!" De Shun screamed forlornly as he charged through the ruins of Morning Dao Sect. He had survived not because he had great power or Enchanted Treasures. It was just pure coincidence; one that even Su Xuan Yi had not paid attention to.

After all, there would surely be a few people who would manage to avoid a destruction that caused the deaths of several millions of people.

With a broken smile, De Shun charged through the ruins of Morning Dao Sect before he came to a sudden halt. Then, he rushed to a fragment of a broken continent floating in the area below. When he descended, he immediately formed a seal with his hands, and the fragment let out a bang. As dust and dirt flew into the air, a body buried in a pit was revealed.

It belonged to a woman which De Shun had never seen before, but if Su Ming saw her, he would definitely be able to recognize, for she was... Xu Hui.

Her face had drained of color. While seated, her eyes were shut tight. There was blood at the corners of her mouth. Her hair was no longer black, but had turned white. There was a purple layer of light around her, and its shape resembled that of a scorpion. In fact, there was also the mark of a scorpion occasionally shining at the center of her brows.

The instant De Shun saw Xu Hui, her eyes fly open behind the purple screen of light. Dark light shone within them, as if there was a scorpion hidden in her pupils. Malice spread out from her, and she moved at that instant and appeared right beside De Shun, whose expression changed drastically and who was just about to say something. Without any hesitation, Xu Hui grabbed his neck at lightning speed. It was too fast for De Shun to dodge.

“You...” De Shun’s expression immediately changed, but a vast power instantly came from Xu Hui’s right hand, suppressing him. The moment fear appeared in his eyes, Xu Hui raised her left hand and struck the center of his brows. At the same time, the shadow of a scorpion rushed out of her left hand and went into De Shun’s body through her palm.

“I’ve planted the Scorpion Shadow Gu Poison in you. Bring me to Su Ming. He will break this Shadow Gu Poison in your body and will also grant you a great serendipity! No one else but the people I’ve acknowledged can cure this gu poison. If you try it recklessly, you will surely die an unnatural death!”

The moment Xu Hui said those words, her body shuddered. Then, she closed her eyes and fell to the ground, unconscious.

With a pale face, De Shun immediately took a few steps back. Fear lingered on his face. The power Xu Hui had showed just then was incredibly great in his eyes, reminding him of the Almighties he had faced in the past.

In fact, he could sense clearly that if she wanted to kill him, she could have easily done so.

“Damn it, did you just return my kindness with enmity?!”

Anger appeared on De Shun’s face. He circulated his cultivation base to check his body, and his facial color immediately went even paler. He even shuddered a few times.

He could clearly sense his veins twisting in his body, intersecting with each other to form the shape of a scorpion. Cold chill filled his body, making him suck in a sharp breath. He remembered the words Xu Hui had said before she fell unconscious.

Outrage filled De Shun’s body as he thought about what had happened. It had been out of good intentions that he had checked to see whether she was alive, yet he ended up in such a situation. If anyone else was in his position, they would definitely feel as indignant as he was.

“Damn it, who is Su Ming? Where am I supposed to find this Su Ming? I can’t even get out of Morning Dao Sect, y-y-you...”

De Shun fumed with rage. He took a few steps forward to check the unconscious Xu Hui, then raised his leg, intending to kick her, but the instant he raised his leg, her eyelashes fluttered, and she opened her eyes.

This instantly caused De Shun to shudder, and he put on an obsequious smile while moving backwards in a submissive manner.

Yet the instant Xu Hui opened her eyes, her body started shrinking in a bizarre manner, and in just the span of a few breaths, she, who was originally an adult, turned into a little girl of around six or seven years old.

“Who-who are you?!”

The instant De Shun moved back, fear and panic appeared in Xu Hui’s eyes, and she swiftly moved backwards as well, as if she was terrified of him. She hugged herself while her face filled with wariness and fear. She looked as if she was about to cry.

“Where is this? Wh-who are you?!”

De Shun was taken aback. He stared at Xu Hui in surprise, then once he scrutinized her, he asked a question as a test.

“Um... Lady Immortal, don’t you remember me?”

“Big brother, who are you? I-I don’t know you.” Xu Hui’s face was pale. She looked around herself in panic, and the fear in her eyes grew stronger.

A thought appeared in De Shun’s head. He took a few more steps back before asking another question to test her.

“Who is Su Ming?”

“Su Ming? Who is Su Ming? Are you Su Ming?”

Confusion appeared on Xu Hui’s face as if she was somewhat familiar with that name, but almost the same moment, pain clouded her features. The mark of the scorpion shone, and Xu Hui immediately wrapped her hands around her head. As she shuddered, her pain grew even more intense.

“Aha!” De Shun’s eyes instantly brightened, and great joy filled his heart.

‘Looks like this diabolical woman has lost her memories. But it’s not a surprise. After all, I might have been lucky enough to live through this disaster, but not everyone was as fortunate as I. She must have activated some sort of divine ability which allowed her to live, but its great side effect is that it will cause her to lose her memories and even turn her into a child. Yup, that’s definitely the case!

'That's why she planted that Scorpion Something Gu Poison in me the first time she woke up... She had also referred to me as big brother. Could it be? that's right, her memories must have become jumbled up, and by the looks of it, she's filled with fear. Her body is that of a child as well. Could it be?

'Could it be that her memories have regressed to the period of time when she was still a child and she has yet to walk down the path of cultivation?'

De Shun let out a dry cough, and with shifty eyes, he took a few steps forward. A sleazy look immediately appeared on his face.

"Little girl, where are your parents?" De Shun delivered his question in an incredibly natural manner, and there was not a hint of falsehood in it, as if he was truly treating her as a young girl he had met coincidentally.

"Papa... Mama... I don't know. I want to go home..." Xu Hui started crying like a child. While doing so, she started moving backwards.

De Shun's expression immediately changed to glee. He threw his head back and laughed, then leaped towards Xu Hui. He had already made up his mind to beat her up so that he could force this diabolical woman to break the gu poison in her.

De Shun did not think about anything else. After all, the woman was in Morning Dao Sect. She might not be a disciple of Morning Dao Sect, but she definitely had some connection with it. Morning Dao Sect had already been destroyed, so when he looked at her, he had a feeling that they were in the same boat.

"Y-you... Don't come any closer! Go away!" Xu Hui immediately screamed. She quickly moved back, and the fear on her face reached its peak.

Xu Hui, who had turned into child, looked pitiful at that moment, as if she had just gone through a great scare.

However, the moment she finished speaking, disbelief appeared on De Shun's face. He could only watch helplessly as his body moved back, no longer under his control.

"Go away, go away, go away..." Xu Hui repeated in fear. Every single time she said those words, De Shun would immediately move dozens of feet backwards. Gradually, great terror showed up on his face. An ominous feeling rose in his heart.

'This... Could this be?'

"You're a bad person. Mama said that bad people will fall on their faces when they walk..."

Right when Xu Hui said that, De Shun suddenly slipped and fell. His face landed straight on the ground, and intense pain immediately filled his head. However, the pain in his body at that moment could not compare with the fear he felt in his heart. His expression had already changed completely.

‘Puppet poison! Damn it, that gu poison she used was puppet poison!’

As if she had become slightly happier because De Shun had fallen on his face, Xu Hui no longer seemed to be so terrified. She clapped her tiny hands and broke into a smile before she started speaking again.

“Bad people use their hands to walk.

“Bad people walk on their hands and feet like turtles.

“Bad people lie on the ground and crawl about on their backs.

“Bad people...”

“Mistress! You’re my mistress! I’m begging you, I-I-I... I was wrong! I was really wrong! I... I’ll take you back home!” De Shun immediately cried out, pleading for mercy. He was really worried that the girl would next say something like bad people use their tongues to walk...

.....

While De Shun was being tormented by Xu Hui, Bai Feng raised her head with nostalgia on her face to look at the sky of the broken planet beyond Morning Dao Sect. In faint murmurs, she talked about the past while the whirlwind howled outside.

With only half a month left to live, she no longer cared about who was beside her. Even if she was alone, she would still talk about her memories. It was as if only by doing so could she not be alone before her life ended...

Su Ming listened quietly until the bald crane’s divine thought appeared in his heart.

“It’s done! Su Ming, I already told you how to cast that Mortal Refinement Art. Cast it here. If you’re fast, then you’ll go through nine cycles of reincarnation in a year. During that period of time, remember to have the Light of Extreme Darkness spread around you. I’ll also protect you, so don’t worry.” There was a smug tone in the bald crane’s voice as if it was very happy that it could remember the Mortal Refinement Art.

Chapter 1146: Grandpa, Could You Give Me This Fish

A glint shone in Su Ming's eyes. Bai Feng might still be mumbling to herself, but he had saved her because he was feeling sentimental about his past. It was not out of compassion, much less out of love.

From the moment Bai Feng decided to use Su Ming, they were destined to forever be strangers.

As his eyes sparkled, Su Ming looked away from Bai Feng. Black light shone around his body, and the Light of Extreme Darkness swept outwards from his position. It did not spread far, only enough to cover the pit.

At the same moment, Su Ming slowly closed his eyes. Immediately, wisps of black smoke flew out of his body. They instantly turned into the bald crane. It existed in the Light of Extreme Darkness, and as if its body was melting, it looked like it had fused with the Light of Extreme Darkness.

"Mortal Refinement Art. I will surround the supreme treasure with my will, and with my mind as the path, we will enter the cycles of life and death together!"

Su Ming raised both his arms and swung it forward. Immediately, the white ring floated in front of him. It was incredibly big, occupying almost the entirety of the pit.

There was a grim look on Su Ming's face. He continued forming different seals with his hands in front of himself. Those seals were what the bald crane had taught him. Once they were formed, they sank into the white ring.

However, the ring remained still. It floated in the air, not providing any sort of reaction to the seals.

Gradually, Su Ming's speed became faster. The seals changed rapidly, and when nearly one hundred breaths had passed, Su Ming's eyes flew open. He bit the tip of his tongue and coughed up a mouthful of blood. It turned into blood fog and charged towards the white ring. Then, as if it was branding the ring, it carved itself deeply into its side.

The ring shuddered as if the blood Su Ming had offered had transformed under the complicated seals. It seemed to possess some form of strange power that affected the white ring.

However, the shivers only lasted for an instant before the supreme treasure returned to normal. Yet Su Ming's eyes brightened.

'This Mortal Refinement Art is indeed useful. This is just the first refinement, and it could already affect this treasure.'

Su Ming's eyes sparkled. All his attention was directed to his hands.

He changed the seals once more. This time, he lasted nearly two hundred breaths before he coughed up another mouthful of blood. When it touched the white ring, it immediately started shuddering again.

A blood-red thread seemed to want to crawl into the white ring, but soon, the ring started showing signs of recovering. Without any hesitation, Su Ming leaped up and continued moving around the white ring. As he did so, he quickly formed seals with both hands. His speed increased, and more seals were formed. He also occasionally coughed up blood.

If anyone looked carefully, they would find that Su Ming always coughed up blood at the same spot on the white ring. It was the spot where the blood-red thread had almost pushed through previously.

In a short span of time, Su Ming was drenched. Sweat ran down all over him. In fact, even with his cultivation base, he looked like he could not withstand the burden. After all, quite a large amount of his cultivation base was required for every single seal he made. Every single mouthful of blood he coughed up contained a bit of his soul and the blood from his heart.

'998 seals and eight mouthfuls of blood. I only need one more seal and one mouthful of blood to be able to activate the first refinement!'

Su Ming was panting, but determination appeared on his face. With a single move, he brought his right hand up and formed the 999th seal. At the instant he pushed it at the ring, he opened his mouth and coughed up his ninth mouthful of blood. It instantly caught up to Su Ming's right hand, about to land on the spot where the blood-red thread had appeared on the ring.

"Bald crane!!" Su Ming immediately sent a thought in his heart.

The bald crane had long since been prepared for this. At that moment, it let out a shrill shriek. Its disappeared body manifested, and it turned into a black needle. It did not stab the white ring, but went straight to the center of Su Ming's brows. He did not dodge and simply allowed the bright glow of the black needle to close in on him. It stabbed the center of his brows, and once it sank in, it went straight to his brain!

Su Ming immediately sensed sharp stabs of pain that came from a loud roar in his head. It echoed ceaselessly in his mind, growing only louder until it replaced his consciousness.

During that moment, a drop of crimson blood appeared at the center of Su Ming's brows. It turned into a long arc and charged towards the spot where the blood-red thread had appeared. Once it touched it, the drop of blood was immediately absorbed

into the blood-red thread, as if it had been sucked into it. Immediately, the blood-red thread looked like it had received nourishment and began spreading outwards.

Su Ming's consciousness scattered. His mind instantly turned blank, as if all of his thoughts were cut off at that moment. Soon though, his scattered consciousness gathered together once more. Yet when Su Ming opened his eyes, he no longer saw a planet surrounded by the Light of Extreme Darkness. His body was no longer in the shattered planet either, but had instead appeared in a world which he had never seen before.

"Grandpa, could you give me that fish?"

A lively voice reached Su Ming's ears. It instantly grounded his confused mind. His gaze focused, and he saw the world around him.

Above was a blue sky filled with white clouds. There were a lot of mountains before Su Ming while was located on a small island beside a lake. Some villagers were moving about nearby.

Su Ming was sitting on a fishing platform. He wore a straw hat to provide shade for himself against the sun. Before him was a fishing rod, so it seemed that he was trying to catch fish.

Beside the edge of the wooden fishing platform was a net attached to one of the pillars. The net was submerged in the lake, and it could be seen that there was a fish swimming inside. It wanted to escape, but was unable to do so.

Squatting behind Su Ming was a little girl. With childish naivety, she pointed at the fishing net and pleaded for the fish inside.

Su Ming was momentarily stunned. He lowered his head to stare at himself. He had an old man's body. His hands were rough, but even though they were old, they weren't cracked. It was a clear sign of time caused by constant fishing and his constant contact with water.

He stared at the fish, then at the girl, and a hint of understanding appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

The words the bald crane had said rose in his head. They reminded him about the will of reincarnation of the Mortal Refinement Art.

"You will share the nine reincarnations with the supreme treasure. They might be short, but they can also be incredibly long. During the reincarnations, you will no longer be you, and the supreme treasure will no longer be the supreme treasure.

“It will turn into a will that will fuse into the cycle of life and death. If you form a link of fate with it during these nine cycles of life and death, then once the Mortal Refinement Art comes to an end, this link will turn into the connection between you and the supreme treasure, and it will belong to you.

“This might seem simple, but there are actually quite a lot of difficulties in it. First, you’ll have to find the treasure during the cycles of life and death. Only then would you be able to form a link of fate with it.

“Reincarnations are abstruse and profound. Very few people are able to understand them fully. That’s why searching for the treasure during the cycles of life and death will be the most critical part of this whole process. If you can’t find it or focus on the wrong thing, you won’t be able to form the link of fate, and the Mortal Refinement Art will fail.

“As for how you’re supposed to find it... Well, I don’t know either...”

“Grandpa, that fish is really pitiful. Please don’t eat it and give it to me...”

While the bald crane’s words echoed in Su Ming’s head, the little girl by his side stared at him with a pleading look. Since he didn’t reply, she once again begged him in her youthful voice.

Su Ming lifted his head slightly. The sun was blocked off by the straw hat and could not land on his face. He stared at the girl in front of him, then at the fish in the net before gradually furrowing his brows. He could not tell whether the will formed by the supreme treasure was the little girl... or the fish in the first cycle of life and death!

.....

On the broken planet outside, the bald crane sat in the pit enveloped by Su Ming’s Light of Extreme Darkness. It would occasionally cast its gaze at him, who was sitting cross-legged in the distance while meditating. There was a black thread at the center of Su Ming’s brows, and it was connected to the white ring.

The bald crane yawned and cast a glance at the floating white ring, looking incredibly bored.

“Heh heh, aren’t I just smart? I can’t believe that I managed to remember this powerful Mortal Refinement Art. Looks like I was very powerful in the past. I might even be someone very influential.”

While swathed in boredom, the bald crane started lavishing praise on itself. This manner of boasting was what it loved doing the most. When it started getting bored, it would be very willing to do such a thing.

“Speaking of me... Hmm? I seem to have remembered something. This Mortal Refinement Art seems to have some kind of drawback, and it seems... to be pretty bad?”

The bald crane was momentarily stunned, and it used its talon to scratch its bald head. Then it instinctively started moving about the Light of Extreme Darkness.

“That’s odd. What sort of drawback does it have? Damn it, why can’t I remember it?”

With frustration on its face, the bald crane subconsciously flew out of the Light of Extreme Darkness and appeared beyond the pit. The moment it did so, the bald crane widened its eyes and stared at the spot where Bai Feng had originally sat with a blank gaze. The woman had long since stopped breathing, but there was a black thread at the center of her brows that stretched into the Light of Extreme Darkness.

The bald crane put on a long face and immediately flew into the Light of Extreme Darkness along the black thread. Soon, it saw that her black thread... was also connected to the white ring.

“Damn it, now I remember! When someone uses this Art to refine supreme treasures, having other people around them is the most taboo thing. It’s over! If Su Ming fails, then the reputation of my wisdom will be ruined...”

The bald crane’s face filled with gloom. It had a feeling that it could not cut off the black thread, or else the backlash on Su Ming would be incredibly great. It could cause the refinement to fail straight away.

And once he failed, it would be almost impossible for him to perform the Art a second time. After all, this was like an initial impression. Once it was left behind, it would be incredibly difficult to change it.

The bald crane continuously scratched its bald head with a talon. Then its eyes suddenly lit up. It raised its talon, then started moving them in front of itself as if counting something. In just a few breaths, it relaxed.

“There is a hidden serendipity in this. Heh heh, since there’s a serendipity in this, even if Su Ming fails, he can’t blame me for forgetting to remind him of this. That’s right. That’s how it is. I intentionally did not tell him about this because I wanted him to get a serendipity. That’s right. I’m so smart. Haha!”

The bald crane started laughing smugly before it began lavishing praise on itself again...

Chapter 1147: A Cycle of Life and Death

'How could this be?'

As Su Ming stared at the little girl, disbelief gradually appeared in his eyes. The girl... looked exactly the same as Bai Feng!

She looked like the child version of the woman. It made Su Ming remember when she was in Dark Mountain.

"Grandpa, what are you doing? Please give me that fish. It looks so pitiful! I want to let it go. Its parents must be very worried..." The little girl stared at Su Ming. Her pleading look and naive eyes made it impossible for people to refuse her.

Su Ming remained silent. He turned his head to the side and cast a glance at the fish in the net. It was an incredibly normal fish. It struggled in the net, occasionally blowing bubbles. By the looks of it, it seemed like it was exhausted to the point of giving up.

'Could it be that since Bai Feng was around when I executed Mortal Refinement Art, her soul was dragged inside as well? But she didn't form the 999 seals I did just now. They're the reason I kept my memories and intelligence, but she didn't form them, which is why when her soul was dragged in, her memories and intelligence were lost. Only her origin soul is left, and it was transformed due to the reincarnation.'

Su Ming cast a complicated gaze at the little girl who was by Bai Feng's soul.

With Su Ming's intelligence, he could already tell that the fish was formed by the will of the white ring, and there were two ways to form a link of fate with it. One was to let it leave, but this choice was a little uncertain. No one could be sure whether it was the correct method. The other was to cook and eat it. By doing so, he would truly form a link of fate with it. Besides, if he did something like this, then once the refinement came to a successful end, it would mean that he had completely suppressed the treasure.

In silence, Su Ming cast a glance at the girl. He shook his head.

When the girl saw his action, tears immediately collected in her eyes. She turned her head to look at the fish in the net, and her expression filled with a reluctance to see it die. Once she took a few steps forward, she lowered her head to look at the net submerged in the lake.

"Grandpa, then may I lift the rope and take a good look at it? Please?"

Su Ming stared at the little girl and sighed in his heart, giving silent consent to her request. When the little girl saw that Su Ming did not speak to refuse her request, she immediately extended her hands to seize the rope, pulling it up with great effort. When

the fish was slowly lifted up with the net out of the lake, it started struggling. In fact, Su Ming saw a ferocious glare shining in its eyes.

Clearly, the fish had basic intelligence. It might have been caught by Su Ming, but since the net was submerged in the lake, nothing had changed for it, besides its movements being restricted. However, when the little girl pulled it up bit by bit, removing it from the water, she slowly stripped the fish of its life, and a fierce glare shone in its eyes. At the same time, it also started struggling violently.

The little girl pulled the net with great effort. When she was about to bring it to the fishing platform and the fish started struggling violently, a sly expression suddenly appeared in her eyes. She grabbed the bottom of the net and lifted it, allowing the fish to rush out. With a loud splash, it sank into the lake and disappeared without a trace.

“Thank you, grandpa.”

The little girl looked incredibly happy. She turned around and stood beside the edge of the fishing platform with her back facing the lake. Then, she stuck her tongue out at Su Ming, presenting him with the picture of adorableness.

“Is this your choice?” Su Ming’s expression was calm, but he sighed in his heart.

“Yes...”

The little girl looked incredibly happy, feeling that she had done a good thing. She had released the fish, and it would definitely be grateful to her, since it could return to its parent. Yet the moment she said her first word, a huge whirlpool suddenly appeared in the lake behind her. The instant it showed up, a black shadow flew out.

It flashed in midair before growing to be about ten feet big. They could vaguely see that it was a creature that had the shape of a fish, and it was so fast that it instantly approached the completely unaware girl. In an instant, it bit into her shoulder and rushed back into the lake on the other side of the fishing platform while dragging its prey.

The little girl’s laughter disappeared. When she looked up, she saw that the fierce creature which had bitten her and had caused her such intense pain that she was about to fall unconscious... was the same the fish she had released moments ago. If not for the size, they would be identical.

Only at that moment did she see the light in the fish’s eyes. It was not gratitude, but a cold, fierce glare.

When the girl sank into the lake and saw the fierce glare, she found that she could no longer speak. Her lips moved slightly, and there was confusion on her face. She

mouthed her words, and once Su Ming saw them, he immediately understood what she said.

“Why?”

Su Ming watched what was happening. He did not stop it. This was Bai Feng’s choice. When she chose to lift the net, her destiny was decided.

This was not the real world, but an illusory cycle of life and death. Everything was possible in this place.

Splashing could be heard from the water. A large amount of blood filled the area, dyeing a small part of the lake red. Su Ming watched this quietly before closing his eyes. After a moment, he opened them, and a fierce glare shone in in them. However, he only threw the fishing rod into the lake before closing his eyes again.

The sky slowly turned dark, and rain gradually fell from the sky...

The world fell silent and gradually shattered into pieces. Once it was reduced to countless fragments, it regrouped itself, as if nothing had changed... but it also seemed like something had changed.

Su Ming had no idea how much time had passed. When he opened his eyes, he saw a vast sky. It was drizzling, and rain fell on the stone floors, bringing up fog that shrouded the county.

He was no longer the old fisherman, but a middle-aged man dressed in a purplish blue long robe. There was already quite a lot of white in his hair. He sat in a rocking chair under a roof and stared at the rain falling from the sky. He watched the pearls made of water at the eave, the slow moving dark clouds, and the sun which could still be vaguely seen through the dark clouds.

He was in a quiet county town basked in the rays of dusk and drenched by rain.

The house in which Su Ming was sitting had a garden. There were a lot of medicinal herbs planted above the ground. They looked like they were being nourished by the rain.

The house was not big, and only Su Ming stayed in it. He was a slightly famous doctor in this county. He practiced medicine to help people, and he had succeeded in saving quite a lot of lives.

Time trickled by. The patter of the rain grew louder when it fell on the ground. Night arrived even earlier and filled the county with darkness. Only the lights from laps in the houses could be seen, and they looked like some form of guides, allowing people to feel that they were not alone...

Su Ming slowly stood up from the rocking chair. He could still remember that he was Su Ming, but he found that his memories were no longer clear. It was as if he had lived a long, long life, so long that he had almost completely forgotten it.

'Is this the power of reincarnation? This is just the second time, and I'm already like this. Based on this, perhaps during the third or fourth time, I will completely forget why I came to this place...'

Su Ming stood up quietly and picked up a lamp. Its fire shone on his face, flickering, and gave him an ancient aura.

At that moment, banging sounds reached his ears. Someone was knocking on the gate to his courtyard.

"Is Doctor Mo here? Doctor Mo, please, help us!"

Su Ming turned his head around and looked towards the gate, then took a few swift steps forward to push open his gate while under the rain. Once he did so, he saw two men standing right outside his gate along with a shattered palanquin held by eight people.

The two men looked rather similar, and it was clear that they were brothers. At that moment, the one to the left looked at Su Ming anxiously, then came forward to hold his hand.

"Doctor Mo, please help us! My wife is about to give birth, please save her!"

With an anxious face, he dragged Su Ming over. When he was about to call the people holding the palanquin to come forward, Su Ming interrupted him

"Wait, if your wife is about to give birth, you should go to a midwife. This is..."

Su Ming was momentarily taken aback. At that moment, he looked as if he had forgotten about his previous status and seemed like he had completely fused into this world. He instinctively said the fitting words.

"But... ha... Doctor Mo, this is a long story. In truth, my wife's life is hanging on the line. Doctor Mo, I... I'll kowtow to you!"

The man knelt on the ground with a thump. Without even caring about the water on the ground drenching the cloth covering his knees, he started kowtowing to Su Ming with loud banging sounds every time he did so.

His eyes were bloodshot. No one could tell whether the liquid flowing from his eyes was tears or rainwater, but he looked like a ferocious beast filled with despair. If Su Ming did not agree to help him, he would go berserk and start killing.

“Ha... Get up first. I’ll go, alright? Bring me my medicinal box.” Su Ming hesitated for a moment before casting a glance at the man and quickly helping him up.

After a moment, with his medicinal box in hand, Su Ming was lifted up to the palanquin. In the distance, he could see lights in the windows shining amid the rain. They had an air of freedom to them.

Su Ming sat down in the palanquin and placed the medicinal box by his feet as he stared at the county beyond the window. As the palanquin was swiftly carried away, he saw a shed built not too far away at the bottom of the county town’s wall. There was a noodle stall there, and a few people sitting beside a table were eating steaming noodles.

A loud thunderclap roared in the sky. At the same time, a woman in the distance started crying hysterically. Her voice grew shriller with every second.

“Feng Er, Feng Er... Why aren’t you back yet?”

“Ha... Bai Family’s daughter-in-law is...”

The people in the noodle stall raised their heads when they heard the shrill voice and cast glances in the direction of the voice. They shook their heads and started speaking to each other in whispers.

“It’s a pity what happened to that lassie. Three days ago, she was dragged into the lake by a big fish...”

Chapter 1148: A Cycle of Life and Death

‘How could this be?’

As Su Ming stared at the little girl, disbelief gradually appeared in his eyes. The girl... looked exactly the same as Bai Feng!

She looked like the child version of the woman. It made Su Ming remember when she was in Dark Mountain.

“Grandpa, what are you doing? Please give me that fish. It looks so pitiful! I want to let it go. Its parents must be very worried...” The little girl stared at Su Ming. Her pleading look and naive eyes made it impossible for people to refuse her.

Su Ming remained silent. He turned his head to the side and cast a glance at the fish in the net. It was an incredibly normal fish. It struggled in the net, occasionally blowing bubbles. By the looks of it, it seemed like it was exhausted to the point of giving up.

‘Could it be that since Bai Feng was around when I executed Mortal Refinement Art, her soul was dragged inside as well? But she didn’t form the 999 seals I did just now. They’re the reason I kept my memories and intelligence, but she didn’t form them, which is why when her soul was dragged in, her memories and intelligence were lost. Only her origin soul is left, and it was transformed due to the reincarnation.’

Su Ming cast a complicated gaze at the little girl who was by Bai Feng’s soul.

With Su Ming’s intelligence, he could already tell that the fish was formed by the will of the white ring, and there were two ways to form a link of fate with it. One was to let it leave, but this choice was a little uncertain. No one could be sure whether it was the correct method. The other was to cook and eat it. By doing so, he would truly form a link of fate with it. Besides, if he did something like this, then once the refinement came to a successful end, it would mean that he had completely suppressed the treasure.

In silence, Su Ming cast a glance at the girl. He shook his head.

When the girl saw his action, tears immediately collected in her eyes. She turned her head to look at the fish in the net, and her expression filled with a reluctance to see it die. Once she took a few steps forward, she lowered her head to look at the net submerged in the lake.

“Grandpa, then may I lift the rope and take a good look at it? Please?”

Su Ming stared at the little girl and sighed in his heart, giving silent consent to her request. When the little girl saw that Su Ming did not speak to refuse her request, she immediately extended her hands to seize the rope, pulling it up with great effort. When the fish was slowly lifted up with the net out of the lake, it started struggling. In fact, Su Ming saw a ferocious glare shining in its eyes.

Clearly, the fish had basic intelligence. It might have been caught by Su Ming, but since the net was submerged in the lake, nothing had changed for it, besides its movements being restricted. However, when the little girl pulled it up bit by bit, removing it from the water, she slowly stripped the fish of its life, and a fierce glare shone in its eyes. At the same time, it also started struggling violently.

The little girl pulled the net with great effort. When she was about to bring it to the fishing platform and the fish started struggling violently, a sly expression suddenly appeared in her eyes. She grabbed the bottom of the net and lifted it, allowing the fish to rush out. With a loud splash, it sank into the lake and disappeared without a trace.

“Thank you, grandpa.”

The little girl looked incredibly happy. She turned around and stood beside the edge of the fishing platform with her back facing the lake. Then, she stuck her tongue out at Su Ming, presenting him with the picture of adorableness.

"Is this your choice?" Su Ming's expression was calm, but he sighed in his heart.

"Yes..."

The little girl looked incredibly happy, feeling that she had done a good thing. She had released the fish, and it would definitely be grateful to her, since it could return to its parent. Yet the moment she said her first word, a huge whirlpool suddenly appeared in the lake behind her. The instant it showed up, a black shadow flew out.

It flashed in midair before growing to be about ten feet big. They could vaguely see that it was a creature that had the shape of a fish, and it was so fast that it instantly approached the completely unaware girl. In an instant, it bit into her shoulder and rushed back into the lake on the other side of the fishing platform while dragging its prey.

The little girl's laughter disappeared. When she looked up, she saw that the fierce creature which had bitten her and had caused her such intense pain that she was about to fall unconscious... was the same the fish she had released moments ago. If not for the size, they would be identical.

Only at that moment did she see the light in the fish's eyes. It was not gratitude, but a cold, fierce glare.

When the girl sank into the lake and saw the fierce glare, she found that she could no longer speak. Her lips moved slightly, and there was confusion on her face. She mouthed her words, and once Su Ming saw them, he immediately understood what she said.

"Why?"

Su Ming watched what was happening. He did not stop it. This was Bai Feng's choice. When she chose to lift the net, her destiny was decided.

This was not the real world, but an illusory cycle of life and death. Everything was possible in this place.

Splashing could be heard from the water. A large amount of blood filled the area, dyeing a small part of the lake red. Su Ming watched this quietly before closing his eyes. After a moment, he opened them, and a fierce glare shone in them. However, he only threw the fishing rod into the lake before closing his eyes again.

The sky slowly turned dark, and rain gradually fell from the sky...

The world fell silent and gradually shattered into pieces. Once it was reduced to countless fragments, it regrouped itself, as if nothing had changed... but it also seemed like something had changed.

Su Ming had no idea how much time had passed. When he opened his eyes, he saw a vast sky. It was drizzling, and rain fell on the stone floors, bringing up fog that shrouded the county.

He was no longer the old fisherman, but a middle-aged man dressed in a purplish blue long robe. There was already quite a lot of white in his hair. He sat in a rocking chair under a roof and stared at the rain falling from the sky. He watched the pearls made of water at the eave, the slow moving dark clouds, and the sun which could still be vaguely seen through the dark clouds.

He was in a quiet county town basked in the rays of dusk and drenched by rain.

The house in which Su Ming was sitting had a garden. There were a lot of medicinal herbs planted above the ground. They looked like they were being nourished by the rain.

The house was not big, and only Su Ming stayed in it. He was a slightly famous doctor in this county. He practiced medicine to help people, and he had succeeded in saving quite a lot of lives.

Time trickled by. The patter of the rain grew louder when it fell on the ground. Night arrived even earlier and filled the county with darkness. Only the lights from lamps in the houses could be seen, and they looked like some form of guides, allowing people to feel that they were not alone...

Su Ming slowly stood up from the rocking chair. He could still remember that he was Su Ming, but he found that his memories were no longer clear. It was as if he had lived a long, long life, so long that he had almost completely forgotten it.

'Is this the power of reincarnation? This is just the second time, and I'm already like this. Based on this, perhaps during the third or fourth time, I will completely forget why I came to this place...'

Su Ming stood up quietly and picked up a lamp. Its fire shone on his face, flickering, and gave him an ancient aura.

At that moment, banging sounds reached his ears. Someone was knocking on the gate to his courtyard.

"Is Doctor Mo here? Doctor Mo, please, help us!"

Su Ming turned his head around and looked towards the gate, then took a few swift steps forward to push open his gate while under the rain. Once he did so, he saw two men standing right outside his gate along with a shattered palanquin held by eight people.

The two men looked rather similar, and it was clear that they were brothers. At that moment, the one to the left looked at Su Ming anxiously, then came forward to hold his hand.

“Doctor Mo, please help us! My wife is about to give birth, please save her!”

With an anxious face, he dragged Su Ming over. When he was about to call the people holding the palanquin to come forward, Su Ming interrupted him

“Wait, if your wife is about to give birth, you should go to a midwife. This is...”

Su Ming was momentarily taken aback. At that moment, he looked as if he had forgotten about his previous status and seemed like he had completely fused into this world. He instinctively said the fitting words.

“But... ha... Doctor Mo, this is a long story. In truth, my wife’s life is hanging on the line. Doctor Mo, I... I’ll kowtow to you!”

The man knelt on the ground with a thump. Without even caring about the water on the ground drenching the cloth covering his knees, he started kowtowing to Su Ming with loud banging sounds every time he did so.

His eyes were bloodshot. No one could tell whether the liquid flowing from his eyes was tears or rainwater, but he looked like a ferocious beast filled with despair. If Su Ming did not agree to help him, he would go berserk and start killing.

“Ha... Get up first. I’ll go, alright? Bring me my medicinal box.” Su Ming hesitated for a moment before casting a glance at the man and quickly helping him up.

After a moment, with his medicinal box in hand, Su Ming was lifted up to the palanquin. In the distance, he could see lights in the windows shining amid the rain. They had an air of freedom to them.

Su Ming sat down in the palanquin and placed the medicinal box by his feet as he stared at the county beyond the window. As the palanquin was swiftly carried away, he saw a shed built not too far away at the bottom of the county town’s wall. There was a noodle stall there, and a few people sitting beside a table were eating steaming noodles.

A loud thunderclap roared in the sky. At the same time, a woman in the distance started crying hysterically. Her voice grew shriller with every second.

“Feng Er, Feng Er... Why aren't you back yet?”

“Ha... Bai Family's daughter-in-law is...”

The people in the noodle stall raised their heads when they heard the shrill voice and cast glances in the direction of the voice. They shook their heads and started speaking to each other in whispers.

“It's a pity what happened to that lassie. Three days ago, she was dragged into the lake by a big fish...”

Chapter 1149: How Many Lines Does a Leaf Have...?

Su Ming sat in the palanquin and shook his head fiercely. He could sense that there was a muddled area in his mind, as if a veil had covered his memories. Some time was required for him to remember his past self.

He watched the people in the noodle stall talking to each other and the woman screaming shrilly in the rain gradually fade away into the distance. He felt like he had understood something.

However, when he tried pondering over it, his mind turned completely blank.

In silence, he sat in the palanquin and slowly went into the distance with the man leading the way in the front. They continued walking until they reached a corner of the county town. There was a courtyard before them. It did not occupy too big of a space, but it was very exquisite. There were two lamps hanging on the gate, but the fire in them had already been extinguished. They only swayed in the wind.

The rain might have been heavy, but there were quite a number of people who were busy with their own tasks in the house. However, if anyone took a closer look, they would be able to tell that almost every single person was panicked and fearful. They were shuddering as if they had been frightened by something.

The palanquin stopped outside the house. The curtain over the window was lifted, and with anxiety on his face, the man looked at Su Ming.

“Doctor Mo, please save my wife...”

Su Ming nodded. With the medicinal box in hand, he quickly walked out of the palanquin. The man started running swiftly, and Su Ming was dragged into the courtyard. The instant he stepped foot into it, a shrill scream of pain suddenly came

from the room in front of him. It was a woman's voice. There was frailty in her voice, and she seemed to be in unbearable pain.

At the same time, an old woman pushed open the door to the room. There was fear on her face, and when she walked out, she shuddered before she started screaming loudly.

"Monster! This... This is a monster!" The old woman was clearly a hired midwife. The moment she opened her mouth, a person came forward to drag her out of the courtyard.

Su Ming came to a halt. The man in front of him had tears in his eyes. When he noticed that Su Ming had stopped, he turned around and knelt down with a thump.

"Doctor Mo, we've already asked three midwives to come here, and the one just now was the fourth, but all of them reacted this way. All of them cried out about monsters and refused to continue. Doctor Mo, please save us! Please, I'll kowtow to you."

The man kowtowed ceaselessly, causing Su Ming to sigh softly. He ignored the man and picked up the medicinal box to walk towards the room where the expecting woman was.

Inside, Su Ming immediately saw a woman lying on a bed. Her face was pale, as if she was already on the verge of death. At the instant he saw the woman, Su Ming's heart trembled. She was... Bai Feng!

Her belly was swollen, and Su Ming could vaguely see the shadow of a big fish. It was indistinct, but the fish was the one that Su Ming had seen in his first reincarnation.

When he saw it, a loud roar suddenly rang out at the back of his head. He seemed to have come to a sudden understanding. He also remembered the crazy woman and the dialogue between the people in the noodle stall while he was in the palanquin.

'Reincarnation... So this is reincarnation? It isn't the circle I thought about previously, where the changes occur from the start to the end of a person's life.

'Reincarnation isn't a circle. It takes all kinds of shapes, and it is a world formed by countless connecting dots!

'My first reincarnation was as a fisherman, and this is a dot. I personally witnessed Bai Feng being devoured by a fish. Then, in my second life, I am no longer a fisherman. I became a doctor, but I am still in this world. It's just that I've become another connecting dot!

'This is a world, and I... will become all sorts of people in this world due to the cycles of life and death. So this... is reincarnation?'

Su Ming's heart trembled as if he had come to truly understand something, but there was still something lacking. He felt that there were a few things which still evaded him.

A scream of pain from the expecting woman interrupted Su Ming's thoughts, causing his gaze to become slightly complicated.

'This person and the baby in her womb... Clearly, the baby is the manifestation of the will of the ring. If I sacrifice the woman and let the baby be born, I will be able to form a link of fate with it... but...'

Su Ming remained silent. He could vaguely sense the power existing in the cycles of life and death. It was a power of destiny that was one of the countless connecting dots in the world, but the things it did could cause a great change in the entire world.

The current situation could be taken as an example. If Su Ming chose the baby and helped it be born smoothly, then the woman would certainly die. The born baby would have no mother, and no one could tell what would happen to it in the future.

But if he chose the mother, he would be killing a baby before it was born. Because of that, the world would be missing a dot, and because of it, the changes which would have happened due to its existence will be lost forever.

'Every single reincarnation is linked together. The story which happened previously has bled countless types of changes to this one. All of them are activated in an unseen manner based on my choices...

'If the fish did not eat the girl, this woman wouldn't have such a difficult labor... and the mother who went mad in the rain wouldn't have appeared either...'

In silence, Su Ming stared at the woman whose breathing was growing increasingly weaker. He also stared at the baby in her womb, whose presence was also becoming weaker with each passing moment. After a long while, he raised his right hand and swung his arm at the woman. With it, her breathing instantly became stronger and steadier, but behind it was a life swiftly flowing away. In just the span of a few breaths, a baby's cries rang out in the air. A smile appeared on the woman's lips, and she closed her eyes, breathing her last.

The adult died and the baby lived. Or rather, the baby was born because the adult died. With a person's death, another person survived!

With the baby in his arms, Su Ming quietly pushed open the door to the room and stared at the anxious man outside. At the instant the man saw the baby, excitement appeared on his face. He took a few steps forward, but when he saw the dead woman on the bed, his face instantly turned pale. He staggered, and sadness as well as anger appeared in his eyes.

He stopped moving, then threw his head back to let out a forlorn roar. He did not stare at Su Ming or the baby, but instead took a step forward to arrive beside the bed. When he saw the woman, who still had a smile filled with maternal love on her lips even though she had already died, tears fell from his eyes.

“Is this your choice?! Why didn’t you ask me?! WHY?!”

The man turned his head around and glared at Su Ming. He did not even stare at the baby in his arms, but instead started shouting loudly as if he had gone mad.

The forlorn voice made Su Ming sigh softly, but the next moment, with red in his eyes, the man suddenly raised his right hand and pointed at Su Ming.

With it, a great sense of danger rose in Su Ming’s heart. When he turned his head around, his pupils shrank rapidly, and he saw a scene he could not believe!

He saw a vague figure appear faintly behind the man. Its presence might have been faint and fragile, looking like it might disappear when wind blew against it, but at the instant Su Ming saw the figure, his heart trembled in a manner he had never experienced before.

“How could this be?” he mumbled. A hole appeared at the center of his brows. Blood poured out from it, taking away his life and soul with it.

He could not dodge the one finger strike. It was like a destined strike. The moment Su Ming saw the figure behind the man, he was destined to die.

That figure... was himself. Su Ming saw himself.

The body slowly fell down. The instant Su Ming’s consciousness scattered, the entire world went silent and gradually shattered to turn into a gigantic vortex. The pieces regrouped and turned into a complete world again. Moments later, Su Ming opened his eyes.

Rain was pouring. It was dark, but the lamps in the area were bright. A shrill scream of pain came from the house, clearing Su Ming’s head. When he looked around, he found himself in a courtyard. As he stared around it, he felt that it was incredibly familiar, but there was also a hint of unfamiliarity to it.

However, it was very weak, and Su Ming could not help but disregard it while picking up anxiety. He stared at the servants busying themselves in the courtyard and the figure under the lamps in the room. The person in pain in the room was his wife.

It was the day she was supposed to give birth, but a long time had passed, and they had already brought two midwives. Each of them would eventually run out with fear and panic, announcing their refusal to continue helping with the labor.

“Monster... Monster!”

The door to the room was pushed open swiftly. An old woman ran out while shuddering. Through the door, Su Ming could see his wife struggling in pain, and his heart clenched in pain.

He had forgotten his past. It was as if this was who he was supposed to be. He was a slightly reputable ministry councilor in this county town, and he had a well-off family, a beautiful wife, as well as an official rank in the government. Yet now, he could do nothing but stare at his wife in pain and watch as the midwives screamed that there was a monster.

“Have someone get the palanquin! We’re going to Doctor Mo!”

Su Ming gritted his teeth. He remembered Doctor Mo, the doctor who had the greatest medical skills in the county town and whom he disliked for some unknown reason. Yet at that moment, he could no longer care about stuff like that. When he turned around, he went into the rain, and with his servants, he rushed out of the house. At a rapid speed, the group went past a noodle stall with rain pouring down over them. He did not see the old owner of the noodle stall sitting there and taking out his tobacco pipe before casting a glance at him.

Neither did he pay any attention to the crazy woman screaming for her daughter in the rain. Her shouts only brought annoyance to the others in the dark night filled with rain.

When he arrived outside Doctor Mo’s house, he went forward to knock on his gate. Rain fell on his body, and there was a cold chill to it, but at that moment, he couldn’t care less about that. The only thing on his mind was his wife and child.

“Is Doctor Mo here? Doctor Mo, please, help us!”

The moment the door to the room was pushed open, he grabbed the middle-aged doctor with anxiety on his face.

“Doctor Mo, please help us! My wife is about to give birth, please save her!”

Chapter 1150: The Heavens Have Dao, and Dao Has Reincarnation

Su Ming forgot his own status and lost all his past memories. He believed himself to be the man whose wife was about to give birth from the bottom of his heart.

However, there seemed to still be a hint of doubt at the very depths of his heart. This doubt was very faint, and it was barely noticeable, like a sign that was about to be wiped off in the cycles of life and death.

As the anxiety in his heart rose, that sign faded away until Su Ming disregarded it. He grabbed the doctor's arm and pushed him into the palanquin before rushing back to his house, not caring that the rain was getting heavier.

When he passed by the noodle stall, he still did not pay any attention to the people in there nor the mother who had lost her child and was calling out to her in the distance.

When they reached his house and Su Ming began waiting anxiously outside the room, he forgot everything about his past. It was as if he was a mortal husband whose wife was about to give birth.

His heart was filled with agitation. The corners of his eyes turned red. A feeling of unrest seized his heart as his wife screamed in pain in the room...

Not long after Doctor Mo entered the room and his wife let out a shrill scream of pain, the door to the room was pushed open. When Su Ming saw a baby drenched in blood in the doctor's arms, he went forward. Like a real father, he was about to hold the baby, but he instinctively cast his gaze at the bed in the room. A shudder ran down his back when he saw his still and unmoving wife.

Grief appeared in his eyes. He ignored the doctor and the baby and walked towards the bed. He stared at the woman who no longer breathed but whose lips still held a smile filled with maternal love, and an intense pain that made Su Ming feel as if his heart was being torn apart rose in him.

He shuddered. This authentic feeling made it seem like he had went through half of his life with this woman...

"Is this your choice?! Why didn't you ask me?! WHY?!"

Su Ming turned his head around and stared at the doctor with the baby in his arms. His eyes filled with red, and his gaze held a hint of madness.

He knew that his wife was going through a difficult labor and there was a high possibility that the doctor could only keep one alive, but if he had to choose, he would choose his wife without any hesitation, not the baby.

However... this choice had already become something of the past.

The intense pain of his heart being torn apart drowned Su Ming's mind. As he laughed brokenly, a storm raged in his head. It brought about a faint memory. It seemed to be

telling him that this was a cycle of life and death. He was no longer himself but had become the doctor before his eyes.

In that memory... he seemed to have chosen the baby. It seemed like this had always been his choice.

A confusion mixed with madness and grief Su Ming could not put to words made him instinctively raise his hand. He had a strong feeling that as long as he pointed at the doctor through the air, he could destroy all lives.

He raised his hand and pointed at the doctor.

He saw disbelief appear in the doctor's eyes and a hint of understanding within it. This understanding made Su Ming remember something, but it was soon overcome by grief.

The doctor fell to the ground, breathing his last...

Su Ming threw his head back and laughed brokenly. As his laughter echoed in the air, it seemed to act as a response to the forlorn calls of the woman in the rain...

On that night, the doctor wasn't the only one who lost his life. The four midwives and everyone else were the same. When the morning arrived and the rain ended, their corpses had already been buried in the darkness.

With Su Ming's status in the county town, he only needed to spend a rather large sum of money to resolve this matter. Everyone's lives continued, and time slowly passed. One year, three years, six years...

The baby girl slowly grew up. She was an obedient little girl that was full of youthful vigor, but she was not loved by her father. When they were alone, she could only see her father's aloof gaze.

Her only companion was the son of the teacher in her house. He was a boy who learned with her. He had been born several months before her and had grown up alongside her.

Su Ming did not like the little girl, because she was too similar to her mother. It made him remember his deceased wife, and an intense pain like that of his heart being ripped apart would strike him.

He loved to silently stare at the sky during rainy days. He would watch the rain fall and the world be enveloped by a curtain of water. Then, without realizing it, he would remember everything that had happened a few years ago.

On one rainy night, Su Ming stared at the rain, and at the instant he closed his eyes, the world was reduced to pieces and turned into a gigantic vortex. When he opened them again, the fragments instantly merged together and regrouped.

He was no longer the little girl's father, but a thin middle-aged man with a scar on his face who dressed in long robes. He was very knowledgeable, but had an ugly face. Due to it, he had been repeatedly treated as a liar, and he had never been able to achieve his ambitions. He could only become a teacher in a house that belonged to some official in a county town.

"Teacher, when man does plenty of good, the heavens will always reward them, is it true?" A clear, puzzled voice reached Su Ming's ears. He lowered his head and saw two children sitting in front of him in the room used to teach.

The two children were about six or seven, and they were a boy and a girl. The one who asked the question was the little girl. Her eyes were full of innocence as she stared at Su Ming.

He only had two students. One was his son, and the other the daughter of the official.

He had always taught his son to be kind and to do what was right, to live like a pine tree and never give up. He had also taught the little girl who was not loved by her father to be independent, to not be sad, and to grow up kind...

"Of course it's real. Doing good is the way to become a proper human being. If everyone did good, there would no longer be unkindness in the world. Remember this, people are born kind. We do not do good for the heavens, but instead, when we help others, we will receive a baptism of our hearts," Su Ming said softly with a smile.

"I know, I know. Grandpa, I saw someone fishing yesterday, so I asked the old fisherman to let go of the fish. This is an act of kindness," the boy immediately said loudly with a laugh.

"All things in the world have souls. The kindness you performed today saved a life, and you will surely be rewarded in the future," Su Ming said with a smile.

This time, he no longer retained a single one of his past memories. Even the hint of doubt in his heart from the previous cycle had disappeared without a trace. He had truly become someone of this world.

"Then when I see someone fishing in the future, I will also do good."

It seemed like the little girl did not want to admit that she had lost to the boy. She cast a glance at him and pouted.

Su Ming stared at the two children's expressions, and a smile appeared on his face. When the sun gradually set, he ended his class for the day, and based on his habit, he went to one of the noodle stalls in the county town. He sat there and ordered a bowl of noodles with hot soup. It tasted pretty good, which was why he seemed to always come to this place.

The owner of the noodle stall was an old man with a head full of white hair. He was dressed in gray robes, and he had always made his own noodles over the years. Even if he sometimes had a worker, the younger person would only be in charge of helping and assisting him.

When he only had a few customers, the old man would smoke his pipe while sitting on the large stone by the stall. He would use the grass on the side to weave grass puppets while he watched the passersby around him. Occasionally, he would drink some wine with his customers. His eyes were slightly muddled, but every single time Su Ming looked towards the old man, he would have a strange feeling.

It was as if he could see a hint of compassion in the old man's eyes, along with the anguish behind it.

This hadn't changed over the years, but Su Ming did not ask. He liked this place. He loved sitting at the noodle stall and drinking hot soup while watching the people in the world outside. It was a good time to think about his life.

On that day, when Su Ming put the bowl down, he raised his head and saw that the old man was staring at him as usual. Su Ming remained silent for a moment before he suddenly spoke.

"Old man, why do you always look at me? This isn't something that has happened just once or twice. Over the years, every single time I come here, you stare at me."

The old man tapped the tobacco pipe against the ground. As he smiled, he spoke softly, with words that carried a profound meaning. "It is not I who is staring at you, but you who is staring at yourself."

Su Ming stared at the old man. After pondering over his words for a moment, he found himself unable to understand the meaning behind them and shook his head.

"You don't understand, huh? Heh heh, I am watching and waiting for the day you will no longer come and... another you arrives."

Su Ming frowned. Just as he was about to speak, he heard the old man mumble to himself.

"The fisherman always comes here, because I buy his fish. Only with it can I make the soup for my noodles taste like seafood... Not all children are kind-hearted by nature."

Only when they are taught to be kind will they try to persuade the fisherman to let go of the fish they caught...

“The heavens have Dao, and Dao has reincarnations. If that child was not dragged away by the fish, the wife of the official would not have been possessed and forced to give birth. If that was the case... the doctor would still be the doctor and not a corpse... The official would also still be the official. He would not have become a man who did not love his own daughter.

“If that was the case, he would also not have the teacher teach his own daughter, but would instead teach her himself. Perhaps he would not teach her how to perform deeds of kindness, and she would not persuade the fisherman to release the fish...

“And because of it, the teacher would not be around, and his son would also not be around...”

When Su Ming heard this, his heart trembled. He suddenly stood up and stared at the old man in a dumbfounded manner. He could vaguely feel like something in his mind was about to break, but at that moment, the old man sighed softly. He stared at Su Ming with a complicated gaze. This gaze made him feel like... he was staring at a bronze mirror which reflected himself.

“You have yet to arrive at the moment when you gain the epiphany. Go on, be on your way...”

The old man shook his head and tapped the tobacco pipe in his hand against the ground. Immediately, a bang rang in Su Ming's head. The world shattered to pieces during that instant and turned into a gigantic vortex.

It spun with loud rumbles, and the fragments of the broken world regrouped to form another scene in the same world—a new cycle of life and death.

Chapter 1151: The Memory of Seven Breaths

The girl was a child whose mother had died and whose father did not love her.

Since birth, she had never seen her father smile, and she had never had any sort of paternal love. From the moment she could remember herself, she had to cover her body and face with blankets during the nights, and in the morning, she had to be careful and avoid the rooms in which her father stayed. If she ran into him, she would only see his aloof gaze.

It seemed to be resenting her for not dying, and while she was still just a child, she understood what it meant...

She did not have many friends. There was only the son of her teacher who had grown up with her, and he was her childhood friend. If she was to add another person as her friend, then it would be the teacher. He taught her to perform good deeds and taught her how to read. He shouldered all the tasks that a father should take up.

As she gradually grew up, she stopped crying at night, because she knew why her father did not love her. It was because she had killed her mother. She had died because of her.

The girl seldom left her yard. She did not want to go anywhere, since every single time she did so, her father's gaze when she returned would seem to contain resentment. It would seem to question her why she still came back and why... she had not died outside!

She lived in this sort of environment since her birth, and she was incredibly afraid of her surroundings, which led to her timid nature. However, on that day, she decided to venture outside, because she heard from her teacher during her lessons that saving a life was an act of kindness. She wanted to be like her childhood friend and ask the fisherman to let a fish go.

That was why even if faint signs of dark shadows appeared in the sky, which seemed to promise that rain would pour for several days once it came, she still snuck out and appeared on the fishing platform beside the lake. She saw the fisherman sitting there while a fishing net hung on a pillar beside him. There was a big fish struggling inside it.

"Grandpa, could you give me that fish?" the little girl asked in a whisper of the fisherman who had his back turned towards her.

"Grandpa, that fish is really pitiful. Please don't eat it and give it to me..." the little girl pleaded.

The fisherman turned around. It was an old man who had an amiable and kindly face. He stared at the girl and smiled.

"Ah, what am I to do with you children? A few days ago, a young lad came and asked me to free my fish. Today, you're here as well. But if I let all the fish go, how am I supposed to live?" The old fisherman pulled his fishing rod back with a smile. Once he fixed the bait on the hook, he threw the line back into the water.

"Grandpa, the person you mentioned just now is my older brother. You released the fish you caught for him, so please do it for me too! It's so pitiful, and its parents must definitely be feeling anxious..."

The little girl took a few steps forward and lowered her head to stare at the fish in the net beside the pillar.

“Who said I let the fish go? When that lad saw that I didn’t agree, he ran off, discouraged,” the old man said with a smile.

The little girl was momentarily stunned, but determination soon appeared on her face. She went behind the fisherman and raised her little hands to tap his back, giving him a massage. She looked incredibly adorable.

“Grandpa, come on, please?”

Time trickled by. The little girl’s pleas lasted for more than two hours. The fisherman smiled and shook his head, looking resigned. He got up and moved to the pillar where the net was, then opened it. The fish instantly swam into the lake, diving into the depths, and disappeared without a trace.

“Alright, I released it. This should be enough, right?” The fisherman smiled and patted the girl’s head. As she beamed at him, he turned around and continued fishing.

A happy smile appeared on the girl’s face. With a tinkling laughter, she ran away.

The young girl did not know that when she left, the fisherman raised his fishing rod, and a big fish was caught. No one could say whether it was the one which he had released moments earlier or whether it was another one. In the end, the fact was that the fisherman caught another fish. He put it in the net and hung it on the pillar again.

With excitement on her face, the little girl ran back to the county town. On her way, she passed by the noodle stall without noticing an old man sitting on the large rock. With a complicated gaze, he stared at the little girl leaving into the distance while tapping the tobacco pipe gently against the ground.

When he tapped the ground, the little girl who had already ran into the distance suddenly came to a stop. She saw the world in front of her suddenly shatter before they were swept up to form a vortex. It pulled her in, and after an unknown amount of time passed, the fragments regrouped, forming a deep lake.

Fish swam within its depths, and no one could say where it came from. One particular fish moved in the water and seemed to swim about without any sentience.

It was a fish which had lived for an unknown number of years in the lake, but it did not have many memories. Whatever it could remember only lasted for seven breaths. Everything else was a blank slate.

The days repeated themselves, and every year passed by in the same manner. The fish swam in the lake, occasionally surfacing to stare at the scenery beyond. It watched the

passing of seasons. There were times in the past where it wanted to rush out of the water and take a look at the sky and earth, but the moment this thought appeared in its head and it could take action, it had already lost that thought. This was because that thought had come from surpassed the span of seven breaths... and because of it, the fish forgot it.

However, with only the memories worth the time of seven breaths, the fish did not know grief, and neither did it know joy. Seven breaths were too short, so short that even its grief would only last for at most seven breath. Then, it would forget why it had been sad.

Its joy would last for at most seven breaths as well, since it would forget why it was happy.

With its memory like that, the fish's mind was blank most of the time. It had no memories and thoughts. It would only swim about in the lake based on its instinct. It would stare at its companions, at the darkness, and the distance where no future existed.

One day, when a fish bait sank into the lake, it entered the fish's line of vision.

It knew what it was, but it still went up to bite it. When it was pulled up by the fish hook and flung onto the platform, it saw the blue sky and the world beyond the water, but a pity... it only had seven breaths worth of memories. When it was placed in a net and the net was hung beside a pillar, it could only struggle against the net. During that time, it would only struggle for seven breaths... because after that time, it would have forgotten that it had been caught by someone...

It also forgot that the lake where it was should not be this small and that it should not have a net which it could not leave. Because of that, it would swim about in the net in a carefree manner.

When the net was lifted out of the water and the fish struggled with the pain of suffocation, it saw a little girl. That girl had raised the net, bringing it such great agony.

The fish glared at the little girl, and as it continued struggling, several breaths passed. It forgot why the little girl had lifted the net. The fish only remembered that the girl was the one who had caused it great pain.

Its memories only lasted for seven breaths, so when it struggled free through a gap that had suddenly opened up in the net, it forgot that it had once been caught and brought out of the lake by someone. It forgot that it had been placed in a net, and it forgot that the net was not its home. It only remembered that during the first breath of its memories, the girl had brought it pain. Because of that, when it returned to the water, it leaped up again. It did not know why its body would instantly turn big, but with a single bite, it dragged the little girl into the lake...

Time seemed to continue trickling by. The fish could never know how much of it had passed. Perhaps it had just been seven breaths, but... at that instant, it saw another hook falling into the lake.

It had already forgotten about the dangers of the hook, yet it seemed to know what that hook was. Once it bit it again, it was brought out of the water again, and it was put into a net again before being placed into the water with only a limited area of movement. Then, just like before, it forgot the start of the story and only remembered the ending.

This time, the fish did not see the girl. Instead, after an unknown amount of time passed, the net was opened and it swam out to return to the lake. Upon being freed, it cast the fishing platform a glance. On it stood an old man, and by his side was a little girl who seemed to be staring at it...

When seven breaths passed, the fish started swimming about in the lake, but this time, it seemed to be trying hard to think of something, and it continued thinking even when it bit down on another fish hook and was brought out of the water...

It still continued thinking when night fell and it was taken out of the lake the second time. It had already forgotten the start and the ending. The fisherman took it and sent it to the noodle stall where it opened its eyes to see an old man holding a tobacco pipe through the net. He was using grass to weave grass puppets while staring at it.

"You are my sixth reincarnation..." he said.

There was an ancient air to his words, and the one sentence was spoken so slowly that he spent a total of seven breaths to finish speaking it. This allowed the fish to hear the full sentence, thereby allowing it to be recorded in its memories for all time.

It turned into a loud rumble, and the fish seemed to have remembered something. As its world crumbled, the fragments of the shattered world turned into a vortex. With a howl, it took away the final shred of thought in the fish's mind. It could not see the fragments regrouping, and it could not see another world appearing before its eyes.

Zhang Wen Zhang [1] was his name. It was a name that looked very common, but in truth held a hint of a poetic flair. His father had given him that name, and as the son of a teacher, Zhang Wen Zhang thought that this was quite a good name.

At the very least, based on the name alone, the others would know that he was an educated person.

Yet in reality, he did not like studying. He liked personally cooking good food, such as brewing soup or making noodles. Perhaps it was due to this hobby that as he gradually grew up, he was no longer as gentle and frail as his name suggested, which meant that he was an article written in a book. Instead, he turned into a young man who leaned slightly on the plump side.

His round face looked rather honest, but the light occasionally shining in his eyes would allow other people to tell that he was rather cunning. Yet that was all that they could see. After all, the cunning that others could see was usually something intentionally shown, and it was all due to a person's ego of not wanting other people to think that they were not smart.

Translator's Note:

Zhang Wen Zhang: Zhang is a family name, while Wen Zhang means essay. A long time ago in China, only the rich can study, and the poor did grunt work or hard labor. So, the rich do not need to do hard work, which means they easily get sick compared to the boys who learn martial arts or do hard work, which means they are frail and gentle. Since essay is associated with studies, that's why we have frail and gentle.